

## Sold To A Gang Leader

.

## Sequence 1

.

## © Blessing

.

(Sold out)

## Shawna's POV

I sat cuddled on the floor, the room was a bit dark and there were others teenage girls like me.

There was fear written in all our faces. Who couldn't be afraid in this situation?

We all have been sold. Sold to a sex house.

Men come here and purchase us like items, they buy us and take us to their houses to warm their beds for them.

I couldn't have been here. No I shouldn't be here. It was my wicked step father. That man sold me out,

he is so wicked, I thought I could bear his wickedness until I'm old enough to leave the house but unexpectedly he sold me out like an item.

He is the most wicked man on Earth. The most wicked.

My mother had married him when my birth father died but unfortunately she joined him and ever since then, the man has been a pain in my body.

Especially when he gets back drunk, he uses me like a punching bag and later asks me to sleep outside, I'll have to spend my night outside till the next morning but as if that wasn't enough, he wickedly sold me when he heard about this organization that buys young ladies for sexual pleasure.

I didn't even know it was a sex house until I got here and saw what was going on.

There were a lot of old men with pot belly playing with girls like me - naked.

I got really scared but my fears were confirmed when one of the girls in this room narrated the

whole thing happening here.

"I just pray that I won't be sold out to an old man" she had said then.

"They're no fun at all and they especially uses you three to four times a day."

I continued staring around the semi dark room wondering what my own fate will be. Who will I be sold out to?

I want that individual to be nice and good, he shouldn't be too harsh with me for God's sake I'm still 19 getting to 20 in two months time. And I'm still a virgin.

Who am I kidding? How can people who purchase their fellow humans be nice at all?

Especially during sex? I should really stop dreaming but pray to live long. Yeah, that should be my prayer.

Mom, dad, you two should have taken me with you. Why did you leave me here to suffer? I thought sadly and sighed.

It's been a week since they brought me here. I can

still count the days. They've only brought me out twice for a bath.

I heard that today some interested buyers will be coming to buy us.

I think it's isn't morning yet. Lemme get some sleep. I don't no if I should wish to remain here or to get sold out later today.

I don't just know.

I closed my eyes and hugged myself more tightly, then slowly I drifted into the world of dream.

I saw mom and she wasn't smiling at all. She looked sad as she stared at me. I tried reaching out to her but got taken back to the reality.

"Get her out!!" Was what woke me up.

I opened my eyes and raised my head up to see two heavily bought guards coming towards me or maybe someone else, they were just coming towards my direction.

My heart beat increased rapidly, and it got worst when they held me up from the floor.

Oh my gosh! Is someone already here to buy me or what?

This is not the way they take us for a bath. We all go together and this is not the way we eat, we all eat in here so what? Is someone really here to buy me? I thought and started sweating.

They took me through a long turn, down the stairs and finally stopped at what seems like the sitting room.

I saw the woman that bought me from my step father, she was putting on a red exposive dress, I bet she is in her early 30s.

Her shape revealed in her dress. Her bo\*bs well exposed, so as her laps.

She has a sweet smile on as she stared at the figure standing in front of the window.

There were heavily bought men that stood beside the man she stared at.

"She's here sir" the woman said politely.

The guards that brought me made me knee down in

front of a couch.

Then slowly the man facing the window turned, he took gentle and steady steps towards my direction then he sat down on the couch and faced me directly.

"Idiot, you don't stare at him directly in the face" the woman snarled at me and I took my eyes down.

The man sitting in front of me should be the one purchasing me. He is young, maybe around my age, I'm sure he hasn't gotten to 25. He has that dangerous look on but at the same time, his facial look is the one that I haven't seen before.

He is the most handsome guy I've ever set my eyes on. Oval face, pointed small nose and even small lips, red bloody lips too, part of his hair almost covered his eyes because of the way he left it, but to crown it all, he looks really cute.

I saw him tilt his head to stare at me with the corner of my eyes.

"Raise your face" he commanded his voice low.

I gulped hard and raised my face to stare at me.

"How much?" He questioned the woman as he ran his eyes all over me.

"Um..sir, she is one of the virgins here, we confirmed that and as you can see, she is the most beautiful girl in them all so that's why I picked her out for you. She'll cost about 300,000USD" she explained replying him.

He stood up on his feet and turned to one of the men standing beside him.

"Pay her" he ordered and started walking out.

The men brought out briefcases full of cash about ten and dropped it for her. She grinned happily and ordered her own guards to take them.

Then that guy's men came to me and carried me out of the house, to a waiting car, they sat with me at the back sit then drove out of that place.

Okay, I've just been sold.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 2

.

© Blessing

.

(Let her in)

Shawna's POV

They drove for a very long time, a very very long time that made me feel uncomfortable and stuffy in between the two men.

But finally we arrived a big gate, there were lots of heavily built men stationed at the entrance.

They opened the gate and granted access to us. We drove in and I didn't sight any house or whatever.

They continued driving, there were only tall trees around.

Hmm, haven't we gotten there? I wondered trying to stare around but got restricted by the men.



They continued driving turning and turning and then finally got to another gate, the gate was also opened by the guards stationed there.

We drove in and shortly after saw another giant gate, the biggest of them all.

Wow, that's three gates.

The securities here were much and tight.

They drove in again and the first sight my eyes landed on was the big waterfall up ahead.

It looked so beautiful just staring at it.

They drove pass it and drove into what seemed like a garage, parked and came down. I came out of the car with them and one held my hand preventing me from having a look around.

I think this isn't a house. It's more like a mansion.

They dragged me to the car of the guy that had bought me. He was with a stick and was smoking.

He glared at me and groaned out a "follow me."

He started walking away and I followed him, he got

into the house and I entered with him.

The look of the interior design is great but unfortunately I can't stand and look around the way I want because the guy steps were fast and in order to catch up with him I'll had to run walk.

We walked passed a lot of boys who greeted the guy in front of me and he only waved at them.

He climbed the stairs and started going through a corridor. He continued for a long time and only stopped when he got to a room.

"Dillion" he called out and the door opened few seconds afterwards.

The person he called out walked out and rested his body on the wall beside his door.

"You're back?" The Dillion guy inquired.

But hold on...why do they look so much alike?

Are they twins? I wondered and tried straining my neck to look at the guy. The one that had brought me is too tall so I had a lot of difficulties staring at the Dillion guy.

"Yeah, I got this one for you. I'll be leaving for Mexico tomorrow, she's my gift to you" the guy that brought me responded. He patted his shoulder and started leaving which made me have a clear view of the Dillion guy and it's like I've said. They are twins but this one has pink lips and his hair didn't cover his eyes but fitted him perfectly, if I were asked, I'll say this one is more handsome but he looks more dangerous.

I gulped hard as the Dillion guy stared at me without an expression.

Should I continue following the first guy? But I heard him say, she's my gift to you right? That only means I'll have to stick with this one.

Oh gosh or should I ask?

But why isn't the Dillion guy saying anything? Why is he just staring at me like am really an item not a human?

I guess I'll have to continue following the one that bought me.

I made to move after him but the Dillion guy's voice

stopped me.

"Where the hell are you going?" He snarled making me flinch.

I turned to stare at his now cold eyes.

"I...I just.." I stopped stammering as his cold eyes made me so scared.

"I'm sorry" I apologized simply as not to afford further questioning.

He rolled his eyes and went into his room, then he slammed the door shut.

Why didn't he say anything? Why did he just slam the door? Does he expect me to keep standing here? I wondered staring at the shut door.

I stood there for about 20 minutes before I saw a woman, someone in her early 50s walk up to me.

"Hello child" she called somewhat excited.

"H..hi ma" I greeted back.

"Follow me" she said and turned to leave.

"Ma? He..he doesn't want me to leave" I pointed at

the shut door and said.

She only smiled at me and continued going.

I scratched my hair and started following her. I followed her to an entirely different turn. Like the other side of where we were originally at.

Then I saw about ten maids, they were all on uniforms.

They bowed slightly at the woman as she got to them.

"She is our new master property, make sure she's clean in and out, you know he hates dirt a lot so make her clean and really beautiful" the woman instructed the maids and they bowed and came to me.

Five of them took me to a bathroom and threw me into the bathing tub filled with different body things in it, flowers and all that not after removing my dirty dress.

One took one of my legs and started scrubbing it, another took another leg, they all divided

themselves and almost scrubbed my skin out of my body.

My hair wasn't left out. Every of my body part.

After that my body was dried. They placed me on an arranged table in my naked form and started massaging my body with different oil ment and lotion.

By the time they were done, I completely changed.

They wore on an exposive dress on me. One that covered my ass and my b\*o\*s only, every other part of my body was exposed.

They combed and parked my hair. Spread different perfumes on me.

Gosh, when I stared at myself in the mirror I didn't recognize myself.

In all my life, this is the first time that am looking really beautiful.

With this look, guys are surely gonna trip for me but that isn't happening. I'm sold now, I'm just a property so I bet they won't look at me as a human

but a slave.

The woman came back and smiled satisfied at my looks.

"Follow me child" she beckoned and started walking out.

I followed after her from behind and we started taking the same turn which we took while coming here.

The guys we encountered on the way stopped to stare at me. About 8 of them, they all stopped to stare at me which made me blush a little tho it's foolish of me but this kind of thing haven't happened to me before.

When the woman noticed it, she smiled and said.

"He really choosed the best for his brother."

I didn't reply but continued walking behind her until we got to a door and stopped.

\*This will be your room, you'll come back here after you're done with him.\*

"Lemme take you to his room" she spoke softly and

I took a good look at the door and followed her when she continued walking.

It's didn't take long before we finally got to that Dillion door.

"Young master" the woman called out politely.

"What is it?" Came the grumpy voice.

"She's ready" the woman replied him.

\*\*Let her in\*\* came his voice again.

The woman opened the door and beckoned on me to enter which I did.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 3

.

© Blessing

.

(Strip completely)



## Shawna's POV

I got into the room and shut the door close. The room was a bit dark and the smell of cigarette filled the air.

I sighted him sitting at the far end of what seems like an office, it's not a room, there was no bed or whatever there.

I took slow steps towards him, when I got closer I stood there staring at him as he smoked from the cigarette with him.

There were papers like files on the table there, the table separated the both of us.

He didn't raise his eyes to stare at me, his eyes were fixed on the files with the cigarette still in between his fingers.

He whiffed and finally looked up at me.

I saw his eyes devour my whole body, he continued staring at me without saying anything which made me really curious.

What is he thinking? Why is he just staring at me?

It's really uncomfortable like this.

I never thought this kind of fate will before me ever. I only managed to finish high school two years ago, step father never allowed me attend college. He doesn't even allow me out of the house.

I've learned to always be respectful and enduring but this kind of situation is just too awkward for me to handle.

I didn't even know when I started sweating, just his mere gaze is doing this to me.

"Sit" he growled and I took a sit in front of him immediately, I don't need to be told twice.

"What's your name?" He asked simply.

"I'm..I'm..Shawna" I answered.

He raised his brows and continued staring at me as if expecting me to continue.

Does he want me to continue saying Shawna, Shawna, Shawna? I wondered but fixed my eyes on my laps.

"Why are you here?" His question made me raise my

eyes to stare at his immediately but I was quick to look away from him before an unexpected thing happens.

"I..I was sold" I replied now feeling over uncomfortable.

"Why?" His voice questioned again.

"I... because.. because, I don't no,I just got sold" I stuttered and said.

Why is he asking me that question? What is he trying to do? Is he trying to make me feel worst? Does he think I like that I got sold?

"Stand up" he said again after a long silence and I stood up.

"I have rules and you must keep them if you don't wanna loss your right as my property cause that's what you are now."

"One is, you must always answer every question, don't ever reply me with 'I don't know'."

"Two is, whenever I call for you, you mustn't delay me for even a minute."

"Three is, you don't have the right to stare at me anyhow you want."

"Four is, whenever I ask you to give me your back you'll do it regardless of where we are. Understood??" He rasped.

"Yes..yes, I do" I answered with my eyes fixed on the floor.

"And the most important thing is, you'll be doing other things for me aside giving me pleasures. You'll do dirty jobs for me but that will be some other time, right now I need your back" he continued and said.

Fear overwhelmed me instantly but was what I expecting? I have no right over my life anymore, I've been sold, it'll all that man's fault, that wicked step father of mine, I'd have killed him if I knew he was gonna sell me out to a sex house one day.

Oh gosh!

I turned slowly to back him praying that he doesn't kill me, I need my life, with life there is hope but not hope of escape, hell, I don't think I can ever escape

from here with all these securities. No, I won't ever think of that.

I felt him stand up from his chair and he came to stand behind me.

"Strip completely" his voice came again, they weren't commanding, normal cold or hard, just normal.

I took my hand to the mini wears and eventually pulled them off my body. Thank goodness I'm backing him, he won't be able to see me completely but oh no!!!

He walked over and stood in front of me.

Oh goodness!!

I took my eyes to the floor immediately.

Why? Why? Can't you just do what you wanna do from behind? I almost screamed out at him but I know better. He doesn't look like someone that can tolerate nonsense so for my own good it's better I behave.

My eyes fled up to stare at his, breaking one of his

rules immediately I felt his hand on one of my bre\*st.

Goodness!!!

I felt shivers ran down my spine. No one has ever touched my br\*ast like that before.

I quickly took my eyes down to the floor, my heart threatening to beat out of my chest.

His second hand touched my other br\*ast and in order not to scream out I folded my lips and pinned my toes to the floor.

I felt one of his hands move slowly to my abdomen, then finally touched my V. Earlier today, those people like maids had shaved me clean down there.

I felt his fingers trying to penetrate into my V and my legs started shaking. I had to fold my hands in order not to push him away from me.

You have to be obedient Shawna. This is your life now, I reminded myself.

One of his fingers forced it's way into my p\*\*\*y and he began to maybe finger me or what do they call it?

But luckily for my soul, his phone started ringing.

He left me immediately and went to pick his call.

"Yes? Okay" was what I heard.

"Go to your room" I heard him groan out.

I quickly put on my clothes and ran out relieved that nothing happened.

I think my parents made this miracle happen.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 4

.

© Blessing

.

(Ma'am Sandra)

Shawna's POV

I got back to the room the middle aged woman

showed to me, then I opened the room and got in.

A wow escaped my mouth as I walked in.

Gosh, the room looks like a Cinderella room, did they really prepare this room for me or am I in the wrong room?

I can't be in the right room. No!

Definitely, I think I've gotten into the wrong room.

Maybe I should go back out and retract my steps.

I made to turn back and go out when I heard the cracking sound of a door opening.

"Dill is that you?" I heard a tiny voice ask.

I waited for the person to come out fully from the inner room there and when the person did, I discovered the person to be a girl, about my age.

She has a towel wrapped around her body and her hair dripping wet, guess that's the bathroom.

She gawked at me making me wonder why. Does she have to stare at me like that even tho I made a mistake of entering her room. I might be older than



her.

"Who the hell are you bit\*h?" She came forward and stood glaring at me.

"I..I think I made a mistake of getting into your room, I was about to leave" I said to her.

"Well out" she barked and I scoffed inwardly.

Who the hell is she? She has such a temper and she's rude.

But I'm a slave and she might be connected to those guys so I should better respect myself.

I turned and walked out of the door, walked back to Dillions door and started walking back carefully, counting the number of rooms I passed.

Then I finally got to the fourth room and stopped, I think it's the fourth one.

Yeah, it should be, I thought and opened the door slowly and peeped into the room.

The room looks normal, not stylish but still better than my room, the one at my step father's house.

I entered and stood for a minute to see if I will hear any sound but didn't.

Okay, I think this should be it. I don't think those maids or workers have rooms around here.

I sat down on the bed and closed my eyes for few minutes, I opened them back and stared at my Simi naked body.

"This is your life now Shawna, get used to it and make sure you remove those strange feelings you're having right now" mom had told me years ago when we moved into my step father's house.

I couldn't bear that I won't be able to see father again. Mom doesn't even wanna remarry, she doesn't have it in her but because of how young she was, she was forced by her relatives to remarry. And she did but later died, she died and left me all alone with the cruel man.

He has his own children tho but they are all outside the country studying or doing one thing or the other, they are the ones that usually send him money weekly for up keeping, if not, the both of us could

have starved to death cause all he knows how to do is drink, drink and drink.

One of his daughters, my step sister, Valentina. She's a twin tho, valentine is a pain in the neck while Valentina is very nice, she treated me like a normal human being during the time they came for vacation.

Valentina is the only nice person amongst all my step father's children. Only her and I miss her, she's also super super pretty with her dresses.

I wonder what her reaction will be when she learns that her father has sold me out.

I was still recalling past events when I heard a knock at the door and I quickly ran to get it.

"You're the new Master's Girl right?" The maid outside asked.

"Yes" I answered with a curious look.

"Okay, follow me down for your breakfast" she said.

I wanted to follow her but stared at myself, she noticed the look and smiled.

"Come on, there are clothes for you in the wardrobe" she pointed out and quickly came in.

I walked behind her to the wardrobe and she opened it and started bringing out all sorts of dresses. They were all too short, damn too expensive.

Every dress she gave me, I could reject it but still no suitable dress there. I ended up putting on a pair of jeans shorts and a white top. Not only that the dresses are short, they are all very expensive too, I can't wear them just to stay inside the room.

The maid sighed and placed her hand on her chest.

"Okay let's go now, you'll get introduced to others like me" she said and immediately started walking out.

I followed after her because I was already feeling so hungry.

She took me round and round the building before we finally arrived the place full of maids putting on the same uniform as her.

The woman from before was also there with them,

she was sitting in the midst of them.

"Come here child" the woman beckoned.

All eyes fell on me as I walked closer to the woman, some eyes were admiring me, she was jealous, I noticed the looks in their eyes.

"Are you done with him?" The woman inquired and I nodded my head.

"Okay sit, Beatrice give her a sit at the dinning" the woman ordered and the maid that came to call me quickly urged me to come on and I did, she brought out a chair for me from the dinning table setting and I sat.

"Alright, let's bring out the meals and all eat, it's late already, we should be eating our lunch not breakfast now" the middle aged woman urged.

"That's because you made us all wait for the new little s\*x girl" I heard a voice mumble but I didn't turn to look at the person.

It's better I don't find out those that hate me for my own good.

Several meals were served round the dinning, a lot of meals.

The maids joined and we rounded the table including the middle aged woman.

We started eating and no one mumbled a word until we were done eating.

"Okay please introduce yourself to the rest of the house" the middle aged woman said referring to me.

I stood up and cleared my throat.

"Um..hi everyone, I am Shawna by name and it's nice to meet you all" I introduced.

Some cheered while some didn't utter a word.

"Okay, it's nice meeting you too, I'm Ma'am Sandra, that's what the rest of the girls call me, you should call me that too" the woman introduced her self too.

I nodded and sat down back.

"As time passes by,you'll get to know the names of the remaining girls so be rest assured, don't worry too much and you don't have any job whatever to do here, your job is just to serve the masters,we will

talk about that later tho, as of now, tell us a little about yourself" ma'am Sandra said.

**\*\*Few minutes later\*\***

Ma'am Sandra and I walked back to the main building, I don't really get the setting but I think it's a different building from the one I'll stay in.

"So Shawna, since you met yourself in this conditions you'll have to do your best in order to stay alive, it's obvious you'll be serving only Dillion and not the both."

"I want you to try and remain alive, some girls like you unfortunately..."

She paused and looked up to see Dillon or maybe the other twin climbing down the stairs.

"Dill" she called.

"Ma'am" the Dill guy answered.

"Are you leaving now?" She asked in a worried tone.

"Yes ma'am" the Dill guy answered and placed both hands on her shoulder.

"Be healthy, don't fall ill, when I come back, I want to see you here again" the Dill guy said.

We started hearing footsteps and I raised my head to see the other twin.

Can this one be Dillion or.....

That girl was following him from behind. That rude girl.

The dress she was putting on was extremely short. For goodness sake! She should just walk naked.

Guards followed after them with luggages.

I remember hearing the one that bought me from the s\*x house saying he's leaving tomorrow, tomorrow and not today.

"You decided to leave today?" Ma'am Sandra's voice was heard again.

The guy still in front of her sighed.

"Yeah, Naomi starts school tomorrow over there so we have to leave today ma'am" the guy answered and she shrugged.



The Second twins didn't utter a word, he just concentrated on the phone with him.

"Okay dear, safe journey" ma'am Sandra said and hugged the Dill guy briefly then he started leaving.

He walked pass me and I turned to look at him again.

"Are you escorting them?" Ma'am Sandra asked the second twin and he nodded and passed.

I think he is the one I went into his room early. He is too cold.

The rude girl also walked to ma'am Sandra.

"I'll miss you" she smiled and said.

Wow! She can actually smile.

"You too dear, be good over there" ma'am Sandra told her and she kissed her cheek and walked passed me. She gave me an eye before leaving.

What's really wrong with the brat?

Ma'am Sandra and I stood watching as they all vanished.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 5

.

© Blessing

.

(Snotty)

Shawna's POV

"Ma'am Sandra, can you please explain this to me, I can't really differentiate between the two" I asked her and she turned to me and signed.

"Who exactly bought me and if you don't mind, please tell me who that girl is?" I inquired.

"Of course you opt to know. Dillion is the first twin, the one you saw me hugging is the junior one, his name is actually Dilly."

"The girl Naomi is their junior sister, she is traveling

with the junior master to Mexico" she explained and I opened my mouth slightly then nodded showing that I understand.

"So, which of them really owns me?" I asked again.

"Well, since the younger master bought you as a gift for his elder brother, that makes you, the older master's slave, sorry to use that word tho" she explained and apologized.

"It's okay, no need to apologise ma'am, I already accepted my fate long before I got here" I smiled and said.

So that means, the guy that I was sent into his room is Dillion and he owns me tho I was a gift by the younger twin Dilly, hmm that makes sense.

"But ma'am Sandra, what about their parents? Don't they have...."

My voice trailed off when I saw one of them entering, Dillion, it's him, his hands were tucked into his trouser pocket as he walked pass the both of us and climbed up the stairs.

He is snotty.

When I saw that he was far gone I made to continue with my question but ma'am Sandra cut me off.

"Where are your own parents? You didn't mention them while introducing yourself."

"Um..they are both dead, that's why I ended up getting sold by my step father" I responded, my head bowed in sadness.

Her hand went to my back and she patted me. "It's okay child, you'll survive" she smiled and said.

"Go to your room, we'll continue our discussion later" she urged and I nodded and left her.

I didn't know when a drop of tears rolled down my cheek.

I don't like thinking back to the past. It's hurts. I was barely 14 when dad died, then when I clocked 16 mom joined him. My fate is so so horrible.

I think I'm born to really suffer. Did I offend someone in my previous life?

I got to my room and entered, then threw myself on

the bed and closed my eyes.

Please when I open my eyes, lemme turn 40 years old, so I'll quickly die and join my parents.

\*\*

Dilly's POV

"Dill, who is that clumsy lady? Who is the bit\*h?" Naomi asked with her eyes widely opened, we are both sited in a black limo that is conveying us to the airport.

"Why? Are you jealous of her?" I asked her back.

She doesn't like seeing someone that's more prettier than her, she hates the person instantly, that has always been her dirty behavior.

"Why? Why on Earth will I be jealous of a mere bit\*h?" She half yelled.

"Then don't ask" I simply replied and heard her mumbling words I don't care to hear.

\*\*Next day\*\*

Dillion's POV

Where are you guys right now? I asked into the phone pacing up and down inside my room.

We just got down from the plane, we'll soon be at the quarters, why do you sound worried?

Well, didn't you hear of a plane that crashed idiot? I've been calling but my call doesn't get through at all, I answered pissed and relieved at the same time.

He laughed for a while and continued.

Don't tell me you were worried, when did you start worrying about our well being? He questioned and I groaned.

F\*\*k you, get off, I yelled and cut the call then threw the phone on the desk.

My phone started ringing again and I picked up the call and answered it without looking at the screen.

What is it? Do you wanna continue laughing then you better don't try it?? I snapped.

Um..boss, it's me Luwis, luwis voice came up.

I sighed and ruffed my hair in order to calm down.

What is it? Be fast, I said.

Well, the deal is set, we need someone to collect the coke from him, someone manipulate, we searched up and heard the old cargo likes sexy ladies a lot, I think it's best we use that to get him. Should I search for a very sexy lady to do the job? He explained and asked.

No, I got someone, no need for that, I'll meet you at Luxury hotel at 9, make sure you set everything before then, I responded.

Alright boss, I'll go now.

Then the call went off.

Seems I'll be needing the new slave today.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 6

.

© Blessing

.

(The new slave)

Somewhere in Mexico

Valentina's POV

I stared around the school wondering where  
Valentine, my twin sister could be.

We were supposed to meet here, why isn't she here  
yet?

Please it's getting late and am really hungry, I have  
to go home and eat.

I brought out my phone feeling so uneasy and  
dialed her line, it rang to an end but she still didn't  
pick up.

Damn you time!! I cussed and tossed my phone  
back into my handbag.

We are supposed to take the same car and I can't  
leave without her, and even if I wanted to leave I  
aren't with the car keys.

I tapped my foot on the floor feeling really pissed



with my eyes fixed on the floor.

"Tina??" I heard a very familiar voice and looked up to see Dilly.

"Dilly!!" I exclaimed and stood straight.

Dilly's POV

Naomi had insisted that I follow her to register in school today, she insisted so I had to follow her.

Well, I also schooled here but not anymore, I mean I don't have time for schooling because of the papers and documents waiting to be signed for the companies.

We were on our way to the registry office when I saw someone that looked familiar.

Isn't that one of the twins I know? I wondered and got closer to her.

"Tina??" I called not really sure if she's Tina or Tine.

She raised her eyes up to stare at me and she exclaimed and called my name.

"Dilly!!" She called and I realized she is really Tina.

"Hey Tina, what's up?" I cooed and she came and embraced me.

"Hi Naomi" she waved at Naomi who kept staring at her as if she doesn't know her.

"Hi" I heard Naomi greet her back.

"How're you doing? And who are you waiting for under the sun?" I questioned.

"Well, I'm waiting for that sister of mine, she's really annoying, she doesn't wanna show up or answer my calls and we planned to meet here after lectures" she explained and I mouthed an 'oh'.

"So, how is Dillon?" She asked and I smiled.

"He is okay, just got back from Paris" I replied and she nodded and took her eyes to her feet and I could tell why.

She and Dillon used to like each other, I don't really know how it's happened but then we were all schooling here, they were sit mate and from there, they liked each other and went into a relationship but Dillon's behavior is what she doesn't like, I don't

really know but they ended their relationship.

"Um...Dill, be fast, I can't keep standing under the sun, it's burning my skin yunno" Naomi frowned.

"I'll get going now Tina, bye" I bedded her and wanted to leave but she stopped me.

"So, are you guys seriously not gonna continue schooling?" She inquired.

"No, we've got it covered up okay" I answered and she asked again.

"So, Dillion is currently in Paris right?" She asked almost whispering and I nodded and she sighed and mouthed an 'okay'.

Her behaviour - am sure she still likes Dillion but am sure Dillion has long forgotten about her. He won't get hooked up over a single lady - never, no matter how pretty she looked.

I got to the registry and had her registered, her education is very fast, someone Naomi's age is supposed to be in high school but because we really need her, we had to hasten her education and now

she has gotten into college.

Then we drove back to the private quarters after registering her.

Tomorrow I'm gonna resume work at the company.

Somewhere in Paris.

Shawna's POV

I was lying down peacefully when a loud knock came at the door and it also opened at the same time.

I got down from the bed and eagerly watched a maid walk in, she has this irritated look on.

"Hey slave, follow me" she hushed and immediately turned back and started going.

"To where?" I questioned equally irritated at her behaviour.

"Just f\*\*k\*ng follow me okay!!" She snapped and got out, then slammed the door shut.

I scoffed and scratched my hair.

Who the hell is she? She looks crazy, I should avoid

people like her in order to have a peaceful life, I thought and followed her.

She took me to where I got to know as the servants quarter.

Ma'am Sandra was also there with them, she ordered about three of them to give me a good bath.

But really, I can bath by myself, I wonder why they are the ones bathing me.

But I won't ask ma'am Sandra now, I will ask her later.

I followed them into the bathroom and they bathed and scrubbed my skin as if there was poo on it.

After that my hair was dried and coloured into pink and purple making me wonder why.

They clothed me in a very exposive black dress, I've never seen a decent dressing here since I arrived. Every dress is very so short and Exposive.

Immediately they finished ma'am Sandra took me to Dillion's door and knocked gently on it.

Dillion's POV

I was facing the mirror while buttoning my shirt hoping today's operation is gonna be successful.

That old man always carries those items carefully wherever he goes and I heard he is lugging at that luxury hotel.

I could have killed him straight and collected the items but it won't be really easy, he goes everywhere with his guards and I don't wanna draw too much attention by attacking him.

I had luwis, one of my boys trail him and his men. At his age he is still very stubborn. He doesn't wanna summit those items willingly so I'll have to take them by force.

I heard a knock at the door and groaned out "come in".

The door opened and I saw ma'am Sandra coming in through the mirror.

"She's here son" she said.

"Okay, thanks you may take your leave now" I replied her and she left.

Knowing fully well she was standing there - the new slave, I beckoned on her to come closer and she did.

I stretched forth my hand to her for her to button up my shirt button, the one at my wrist.

She took my hand and buttoned up the shirt, I gave her my other hand and she did so. After that she stepped back from me and I ran my eyes all over her body.

Perfect, I thought and started walking out of the room.

Shawna's POV

On our way to Dillion's room, ma'am Sandra had explained that am gonna be doing a dirty job for them. She told me to open my ears and obey the instructions given to me as that was the only way my life last.

I wonder what type of dirty job it is.

Gosh, thinking about it is really scary.

I followed him up till we got to where numerous cars where parked.

One of the car door was opened for him and he got in, I got in and sat beside him as instructed.

Then he began....

He explained the things I was gonna do and I listened with rapt attention.

Ma'am Sandra also told me to be very obedient so he'll get to like me and that way he won't be too hard on me like the others, she had said.

"Is that clear?" He hushed and I nodded.

"Good" I heard him mumble then he brought out his ipad and started doing somethings there but I dare not look at him.

"Sir, we're here" one of the guards that had followed us in the same car announced after a long long while and he raised his head and stared out.

"Alright, call luwis, let him come get her" he ordered and he answered with a 'yes sir' and left the car.

Then he later came back with a rough looking guy, the guy looked too rough and dangerous.

Although he was kind of handsome but he has too



many openings in his ear. Too many tattoos, there was a cigarette inside his mouth and his hair style, oh gosh! He is just too rough.

"Boss" he called puffing out smoke and looking into the car through the window.

"Take her and make sure you return with it" Dillion ordered.

"Of course boss" the guy answered and I opened the door and got out.

Immediately I did, the guy's eyes ran all over my body.

The cigarette fell off his mouth as he stared at me.

"Oh shit! Where did you come from Angel?" He asked with his eyes still devouring my body.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 7

.

© Blessing

.

(Seducing him)

Shawna's POV

"Luwis!!" Dillion barked from the car and he regained his senses.

"On it boss. Come on babe" he whispered the last part to me as he led me into the fancy looking hotel.

I walked beside him carefully in order not to fall because of the high hill that am putting on.

I noticed people kept staring at me, especially the males.

Why won't they? With me dressed this way it's sure thing.

"Wait Angel" the luwis guy made me stop then he branched somewhere and came back with a red wine and two glass cups.

He handed them over to me and I collected.

"Room 205, that's your target room, be really careful

especially with those fat looking guards posted outside his door" he warned and I nodded and made to leave but he held me back.

"What is your name anyways?" He grinned.

"I'm..Shawna" I answered simply.

"Okay Shawna, you're really beautiful and I like you a whole lot, but later we'll talk more" he winked at me which made me almost roll my eyes at him.

"Go on, be careful!" He warned again and I gulped down and continued walking further, searching for room 205 with my eyes.

I kept going and then sighted about 3 guards standing outside a particular door, they are all big and fat.

That must be the room, I thought and proceeded to them.

"Excuse me, is this room 205?" I asked with soft smiles.

The guards ran their eyes all over my body and I saw them lick their lips hungrily.

"Yes pretty lady, what exactly are you looking for? Me?" One of them answered and they all sniggered.

I laughed softly and shook my head.

"As you can see, I'm here for your boss" I licked my lips and said.

"Huh...did boss..."one of them tried asking the others.

"Come on, you're keeping him waiting, he called me and said I should be fast" I cut him in and said.

"Um...okay" the one in the middle said and shifted.

They opened the door and I start walking in, I noticed different hands touch me from behind. I felt so irritated but shit I gat to move on.

This is only the first part.

I got in into the big fancy looking room and didn't see anyone. I walked to a table with the drink and glasses, then kept it down.

I made to look for the old man but I started hearing one of the inner room doors cracking open.

I turned and behold - it's the old man with pot bully.

He was coming out of the bathroom clad in just towel tied to his lower body.

Oh shit! I tried looking away from him but recalled that I have to act like a slut.

"Hi dear" I released a soft smile and walked towards the old confused looking man but I can also tell that he is very excited seeing me.

"What...?" he tried asking but I placed my middle finger on his lips.

"Shuuu... I was asked to make you feel good" I said seductively praying he doesn't hear my pounding heart beat.

He grinned like a kid and smiled.

"Oh, what a perfect beauty you are?" The man smiled and tried grabbing my waist but I was quick to move back.

"We have to drink first honey, I brought one with me, sit" I cooed and went to grab the red wine.

I popped it open and decanted it into two different

glasses.

I turned to look at him with smiles and found out he was already sitting down while his eyes were on me, waiting eagerly for me to come to him.

F\*\*k! He has to look away, I thought and started decanting more drinks into the cup.

Just on time, luckily for me, his phone started ringing.

He looked away and I quickly brought out the whitish powder given to me by Dillion, he said it will make him sleep Immediately it gets into his mouth.

I poured the whitish powder into his drink.

He didn't even speak with the person calling him. He growled into the phone and tossed it aside.

Perfect! Just perfect! I don't wanna waste time here at all.

His gaze fell back on me as I walked towards him seductively. He kept licking his lips and rubbing his big belly.

"Let's cheers to the great fun we're gonna be

experiencing" I raised my glass and said.

"Yes cheers baby" he clicked his glass with mine and drank from his cup. I drank from my cup too, I gulped the whole content down tho I know it's quit a lot. It might make me tipsy.

He kept the glass on the table beside the bed and positioned himself very well on the bed. He spread his legs apart and loosened his towel.

"Oh my goodness!!" I didn't no when I exclaimed but I covered it up with a smile immediately and tried looking away.

"Come on baby, climb and ride me to hell" he hushed, his manhood already standing.

Oh gosh!

Holy Mary!! What shit is this? This is the first time this kind of thing is happening to me. Why doesn't he have shame at all?

"Lemme keep my glasses honey" I feigned a sweet smile and catwalked back to keep the glass, I was doing everything slowly in hope that he'll fall asleep

quickly.

When I turned back his eyes wasn't shining, he was trying to keep himself awake and I smiled and got back to him.

I focused my eyes elsewhere as I climbed on top of the bed going to meet him. He had a weak smile on, he is still smiling in this state.

What an old fool?

When I got to him, he finally closed his eyes and dozed off.

I turned him over the bed and covered him with the duvet then pulled out the bed foam, it's where I have been told that the briefcase is gonna be.

I sighted the briefcase and tried taking it but noticed I started feeling so sleepy.

I rubbed my eyes and shook my head. This must be as a result of taking that wine too much. I was only trying to buy time and that's it.

I held myself together and pulled out the heavy briefcase.



I hope luwis has succeeded in getting rid of the guards. I don't think I can face any of them.

I ran to the door and knocked on it but there was no responds.

Which means the guards are no longer there.

I exhaled and opened the door, but unexpectedly the guards rushed into the room but I was quick to hid behind the doors.

Oh goodness! I'm getting scared and really tipsy.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 8-9

.

© Blessing

.

(Young master)

Dillion's POV

Few minutes after the new slave...what's her name again???

Shawna. Yeah yeah, left with luwis, I called him to meet me in the rooftop of the next hotel which is few meters away.

In case things goes wrong, don't wanna get sighted here.

So I'm currently here waiting for them both - Shawna and luwis.

It's high time, if things went smoothly, it's high time they appear here.

Shawna's POV

The guards rushed towards the old man in bed and I tip topped out but felt my legs becoming weak.

I wanted to fall with the briefcase but a hand held me.

"Shawna, it's me - luwis. Careful, you did well, let's go, seems there is no need to distract them since you already...."

He was still saying when the fat looking men rushed

out like angry lions. Luwis brought out something, I think it's a teargas then he threw it at them and quickly grabbed my hand and we ran away.

We got outside the hotel and he pulled me into a black van there, then someone at the driver sit drove off.

"Wow! You really tried, tell me how you did it, hope the old cargo didn't suspect anything?" The luwis guy asked but I was really in no mood.

My throat is damn dry. I looked behind me and saw a white bottle with a white liquid, concluding it is water, I grabbed it and gulped it down.

"What the f\*\*k!?! You drink this much?" Luwis asked while I shook my head, trying to shake the sleep clouding my eyes.

"Drink? What do you mean drink? Isn't it water?" I turned to him and asked.

"Of course not, that's vinegar" he answered and my eyes widened.

"What..." I wanted to scream but the driver pulled

over.

"Let's go, the boss is waiting for us" he grabbed me down from the van and also grabbed the briefcase and we went all the way to the rooftop.

I felt my tummy rumbling. My throat is inching me. I feel weird.

This is the very first time I'm drinking an alcoholic drink and I drank it too much, the red wine and then this, I thought it was water not knowing it's also alcohol.

I sighted Dillion standing at the far end of where we were and I tried composing myself.

I feel like dying but I've got this.

"Boss, she succeeded" luwis said smiling.

"Open the briefcase" Dillion commanded and he did.

I saw wrapped whitish power, I don't just understand. What the hell is this?

"Good, take it to the car" Dillion turned to a guard there with him and said.

The guy collected the briefcase and started leaving.

Oh gosh! I need to sleep, I can't get myself anymore. Shouldn't we be on our way or what is he doing?

"Boss? Should she narrate how she did it?" Luwis asked and touched my back making me feel worst.

I bent down a bit with my right hand placed on my chest.

"No, I don't need details" I heard Dillion reply and I didn't know when I opened my mouth wide and puked.

"Motherf\*ck\*ngsh\*t!!!" I heard Luwis scream.

Oh my goodness! What did I do? I raised my head up while cleaning my mouth.

Did I just puke? On Dillion?

I stood transfixed staring at his stained cloth. Sleep instantly ran away from my eyes.

"WHAT. DID. YOU. JUST. DO?????" I heard him snarl like an animal.

"I'm...I'm..s..." I was still stuttering when I felt a sting

on my cheek that made me deaf instantly.

Christ!! He just slapped me.

I felt my head rotate backwards then everywhere became dark.

Dillion's POV

What sort of a mess is this for crying out loud? Who is this girl?

Why on Earth did she puke on me?

So irritating.

"Um..boss, she drank a lot that's why. She is supposed to go home and sleep" luwis who had held her from falling said.

"I don't give a damn! Get her away!!" I ordered.

"Yes boss" he answered and carried her on his shoulder then left afterwards.

\*\*Mexico\*\*

Valentina's POV

"You say what? You saw Dilly?" Valentine exclaimed

and asked.

"Yes, he came to school with their younger sister, I think she's getting into college" I replied grumpily.

"Wow! I wish I'd seen him Tina, I really really miss and want to see him" she said and I nodded slightly and continued with the dinner we were eating.

"So, what about Dillion? Did you get a chance to hear about him?" I saw her smirk and ask.

"Yes, he isn't in Mexico" I cooed.

"Do you perhaps still like him?" She asked and I raised my brows to stare at her.

**\*\*Paris\*\***

Next day.

Shawna's POV

I flickered my eyes open.

Where am i? Dead? I wondered and sat up properly on the bed then stared around and realized I was in the room given to me.

I palmed my face and memories of last night's

incident flowed my mind.

Oh gosh, I can't I puked on a demon?

Hope it's just the slap. Please don't let him punish me gosh!

I came down from the bed headed for the bathroom there in order to have a bath or do other things but was stopped halfway because the door flew open and one of the maids walked in.

"Young master sends for you, he gives you only two minutes to be in his room" she stated, turned back and walked out of the door.

Young master? Dillon?

.

.

.

(Lemme face it)

Shawna's POV

I got out of my room after hurriedly washing my face. I got to Dillon's door and knocked on it.



"Get your ass in" his husky voice said and I cracked the door open and got in - fearfully.

He was facing the mirror already dressed up.

"Go..good.. morning" I greeted fearfully again and he didn't say anything.

He heard but he is just keeping mute. Is he really angry with me?

He dropped the brush with him and finally spoke up after what seems like years to me.

"Did you realize the penalty of what you did last night?" He started his eyes fixed on me.

"First you broke my rules by staring at me after listing the rules to you, right after! Then you relieved yourself on me last night. Do you know the penalty?" He got to me and raise my chin up to stare at him.

"I could barely believe it. I should kill you, yes, that should be the punishment but no, I won't. You're somehow useful to me and since you're a gift from my brother, I won't get rid of you easily."

"But let me sound you a good warning, better stay out of my way, don't get me angry again or I might lose it and really kill you."

"It's a pity, although I won't kill you but I'll still make you regret it. Later today, you're gonna be serving your purpose, the purpose for which you are originally here."

"Don't feel I will let you wake up and sleep everyday like a princess, you'll serve your purpose but in a more painful way, slave!!" He drewled the word slave with his hands now fixed around my neck.

He let go of my neck and went back to stand in front of the mirror.

"Leave!" He commanded and I sniffed in and left.

I got outside the door and couldn't control the tears that rolled down my cheek.

Oh goodness! Please don't let him kill me.

I've forgotten my real purpose here - truthfully. My other mind always try to remind me but I do wave it out.

Since it didn't happen on the first day, I felt it won't ever happen again. How foolish did I get?

He is gonna punish me with s\*x? Please let it be that I misheard him.

I've heard from my friends in high school how first time s\*x hurts and he is gonna punish me with it?

I bet it's gonna hurt like hell. What should I do?

Should I just go in back and plead with him to have mercy on me?

Yes, let me go back in, I thought and turned back to open the door but the door opened from the inside revealing Dillion.

His eyes are so cold.

He glared at me like I stole something from him.

"What??" He barked and I jerked back.

"N.. nothing, I was on my way to my room" I answered and immediately ran away.

How did I forget that he asked me not to anger him?  
To stay off his part?

Please hope he took no offence again, he might increase the punishment.

I can't plead with him. Lemme just prepare myself for whatever punishment, let me just prepare my mind for it. Lemme face it, no matter how painful it'll get. Lemme face it, I consoled myself as I got into my room.

\*\*

A soft knock came at the door and I looked up.

"Come in" I urged the person in.

A maid came in, she looked nice.

She pulled a confused look on when she saw me in tears.

Yes, I couldn't really control my tears.

It's better I cry now than cry there with him.

"Why are you in tears Shawna?" She questioned but my tears only increased.

"Oh dear! I don't know the reason but am really sorry okay? Come down, ma'am Sandra sends for

you" she cooed and I nodded and dried my tears, then left with her afterwards.

\*\*

"So, I was informed that the young master is gonna be needing you tonight, just stay strong, in all the girls that was bought to pleasure him, I think I like you best. You're of best behavior and I believe you won't easily give up" ma'am Sandra said.

"What do you mean? Where are the other girls?" I inquired.

She sighed and looked away.

"Just prepare yourself, I can't tell you that in this situation. You'll be coming down here by 7:30, since he is gonna be needing you then you'll have to be clean in and out."

"One thing he hates so so much is dirt. He can even kill for it, that's the reason why there are a lot of maids here so the maids are gonna be cleaning you up. You should go back and rest till then, that's after eating your breakfast" she explained.

I have a bad feeling. What happened to the other girls?

Did they perhaps die? Yeah, that must be it. I think they died.

Did he kill them out of anger?

Oh gosh please, just have mercy and soften his heart a bit. I seriously don't want to end up like a story.

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 10

.

© Blessing

.

(Give me your back)

Somewhere in Mexico.

Dilly's POV

I climbed down the stairs slowly with my phone

fixed on my right ear talking to the company's manager.

So, I expect all the documents to be ready before I get there.

Yes, yes sir, of course.

Right.

I dropped the call but was stopped by someone right at the ending of the stairs.

"Rita?" I called surprised.

"What..what are you doing here?"

"Aren't you supposed to...."

She was still saying when I covered her mouth with my palm and pulled her into the guest room downstairs.

I slammed the door shut.

"What the hell are you doing here Rita? How dare you show up here?" I rasped at her.

'You didn't bother to call and tell me that you've arrived Mexico huh, you think I wouldn't find out"

she retorted.

"Is that why you came here? Do you want me to restrict you from coming near this mansion, you better don't try this shit again or..."

"Or what? Once you play any silly trick I'll inform the whole public about our secret and you'll be damned" she cut in and said again.

"Oh f\*\*k you Rita. I seriously curse the day I meet you" I groaned.

"You're welcome honey" she rolled her eyes and replied making me more angry.

"Hey you! Has my brother left for the company?" I heard Naomi's voice from the sitting room.

Damn it! How come she's back, and now?

"No ma'am" the maid replied her.

"So where is he? Dill?? Dilly?" She shouted and I suppose she was climbing the stairs as she called my name. As soon as I could no longer hear her foot steps, I opened the door gently and dragged Rita out, away to the garage and out of the quarters.



She can't be seen here, no not by Naomi.

\*

I dropped her off at the front of her apartment after settling her with some cash.

She gawked at me and left the car.

Everything in this damn world I can handle, but just this one lady. I just can't handle her a\*s and I can't kill her either. She knows and that's the reason why she's always misbehaving.

I might really loss it and kill her one of this days, I'm not too good at handling my temper, I thought and drove off to the company speedily.

Rita's POV

I stood by the gate and watched as he drove off.

I smirked, slammed the gate shut and proceeded further into the house.

He is a fool.

"So, did you meet him?" Mother asked.

"Of course mother, I met him and he is still very

scared of the secret" I answered happily and sat down on the couch opposite to her.

"Good."

"How's he?" I asked after a short silence.

"He is okay, he is in the room sleeping peacefully" mom replied.

"Yeah, we need him to be healthy mom. He is our only key to getting the twins, I won't let him die till he serve his purpose" I said and she nodded in agreement.

In case you're wondering who we're talking about then it's my son. My one and only son, the key to everything needed in life.

Somewhere in Paris.

Shawna's POV

Night is approaching.

The more the day gets darker, the more my body shakes. The fear in me increases.

I can't help but get scared really. I have accepted

my fate but...

I'm still very scared. If there is seriously anything I can take that will make me loss my senses completely tonight then I will.

I don't want to feel or remember the pains. If there is an easy way about it, I'll take it.

But that kind of thing can't be gotten here easily. It'll have to be in a hospital so it's hopeless.

Lemme sleep for now. At least I'll stop thinking, I thought and laid down then drifted to sleep shortly after.

I felt someone tapping me then I opened my eyes and sat up.

"Ma'am Sandra sends for you, it's time for your bath" the maid tapping me said and I nodded and followed her out trying to shut the things that is gonna happen after that.

It's just a normal bath Shawna. Don't panic.

\*

After bathing I was dressed up in a linger this time.

A very sexy one.

My body smells real nice. My hair neatly dressed.

I was walked to Dillion's door by ma'am Sandra afterwards. She knocked on the door and left me to enter.

When I got in, I was met with darkness. Not total darkness tho, the room was a bit dark.

I walked in slowly, counting my steps.

Then I sighted him. He was in front of the mirror but wasn't saying anything.

Okay, why does he like keeping mute every time? Shouldn't he at least say something?

I stood behind him, not too close and thought of what to say but no words formed itself in my mouth.

15 minutes passed he still didn't say a word making me feel so uncomfortable.

Gosh! What sort of snot is this?

I couldn't even see what he was doing but he was doing something.

Another 5 minutes passed before he stood up from the chair.

"What are you doing? Can't you at least behave like you went to school? Why are you still standing there with clothes on?" He asked causing a sting in my heart.

He is not only a snot but he is also very cruel. But my step father surpass him tho so I shouldn't be affected.

No, you've gone through worse situation. Don't let his harsh words get to you, I consoled myself as I got to the well arranged bed and slowly undressed myself.

He didn't stare at me till I finished undressing. I sat on the bed then laid flat completely with my head face down.

All you need to do is think about the beautiful times with mom and dad Shawna. Forget about your current state, remember when mom took you to school, remember when dad used to feed you cereal Shawna, remember all those, I told myself

and Immediately started recalling those past beautiful days but all I could do was cry as I recalled them.

My mom and dad aren't here anymore. They are both gone.

I drifted back to the real world when I felt him standing beside the bed.

"You shouldn't lie flat dummy. For goodness sake, shouldn't you have an idea since you were bought from a s\*x house. You should have seen how it done, different styles of it. Your head is empty" he insulted and I held myself from scoffing.

"Sit up" he ordered and I did. "Squat" he instructed again and I did.

"Give me your back" that was the part that hurt most. That very part.

Since it's part of his rules, it's hurts to hear it most.

I obeyed him and did as instructed.

I felt him hold my waist then few minutes later, I felt his d\*\*k touching my ass hole.

Fear overwhelmed me but I don't understand, is he gonna be doing it there?

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 11

.

(The past)

Shawna's POV

My eyes widened I felt my asshole tearing up.

I couldn't bear it. Tears started streaming down my cheeks.

Oh heavens! What sort of pain is this?

He really meant what he said.

Oh gosh.

Writer's POV

Dillion wasn't kind enough to go slow with her. He needed to punish her, in that way, she could never

do anything that will make him mad again.

He knew she hasn't had s\*x with anyone before but he still went rough. Even if she was as tight as whatever, he didn't care. He's thrusts were fast, really fast into her.

Shawna folded her lips in order not to cry out. But squeaks could be heard.

Her squeaks turned to squeal then later increased. She couldn't bear it anymore, especially when he started the main thing.

F\*\*k\*ng her asshole was just like a warm-up. This time, he made her lie on the bed with one leg up, without warnings, he started thrusting into her, a bit slow at first considering the fact that she was also very very tight there.

Then he finally filled her up with his d\*\*k before he started thrusting in with speed.

Shawna at a point felt her hymen break but wasn't so concerned. She was more concerned about the excruciating pains she was feeling.



Down there, she felt pains she has never felt before. But all the same she still cursed her step father. Her hatred didn't really target towards Dillion but to her step father.

But still, she wished he could just let her go. Just leave her but no, Dillion at that point was just getting started.

Few minutes later sweats covered their whole body, Dillion seems to be enjoying the whole thing excluding her tears.

She is the sweetest person he has ever had s\*x with. Being the first virgin too, he didn't want to stop.

At a point he forget about really punishing her with it but just concentrated on enjoying himself.

But her tears, her loud cries didn't really let him enjoy it.

Damn! She was crying too much.

He angrily pulled out of her, wore his shorts on and went into the bathroom to have a long lasting bath.

Shawna became relieved. He has finally left her, her

prayers has been finally answered.

She turned and cuddled herself on the bed, the duvet already turned red, her blood stained it but she didn't mind either.

After a while of staying cuddled there.

She dragged her feet down, picked up the lingerie, wore it back on and dragged herself out of his room.

Shawna's POV

With my breathing faster than normal I left his room.

Gosh! This is really my life now.

I got to my room and immediately went to lie down. I don't have strength for a bath or anything.

I pray I survive the night with the way I feel. I feel like all the blood in my vein has dried up.

I hugged the pillow tightly and before you know it drifted to sleep.

Dillion's POV

I came out of the bathroom after spending a long while there, then stared at the bed and couldn't find

her there.

I wore on a new short, a shirt then brought out a pack of cigarettes under my drawer.

I lighted it and stuck it into my mouth before leaving the room.

I went downstairs and saw a maid.

"Hey come here" I puffed out smoke and commanded her.

She ran to me with her head slightly bent.

"Go clean up my room" I instructed and left immediately then went to the pool side.

I sat on one of the chairs there then my mind drifted to the past.

9 years ago.

"Come here sons" mom beckoned on I and Dilly.

We both went to meet her and she smiled at us before saying.

"Take care of your baby sister for tonight, your dad and I..."she was still saying when a gun shot was

heard outside.

She turned back towards us and said hurriedly.

"Both of you, run to your sister's room, carry her out and go hide in the underground house."

"Fast!!" She screamed when we kept staring at her.

"But mom, wasn't that a gun shot?" Dilly asked.

"Will you both listen to me? Go to your sister's room fast...."

The door bursted open and three heavily loaded men with guns entered the house, a man was with them, a man who was big and fast, he has smiles on his face, he is one of dad's friends, not too close tho.

"Run!! Go!!!" Mom whispered then we both left.

I watched Dilly carry Naomi from her bed, he came to meet me and we both went through the stairs leading to the underground house.

When we both got in, we closed the entrance but I wasn't just gonna stay here. Mom looked terrified, why are they with guns, I thought but my curiosity

got the best of me.

I started climbing the stairs to go out back.

"Hey, what are you doing? Mom instructed us to stay here" Dilly said holding one of my legs.

"Will you let go of my leg or do you want me to knock some senses into your empty skull?" I snapped and he left me.

"Suite yourself then" he drawled and turned to back me.

I successfully left the underground house and sneaked back to the sitting room where noises was coming from.

"Where are your kids Mark? I want to kill them first before I kill you?" The fat bellied man questioned.

Dad was surrounded by the man's guards. A gun was pointed at Mom's head too.

"Didn't you hear, they aren't in the country okay? I've sent them out" mom was the one who answered.

The man holding mom hit her with the head of the gun and she collapsed on the floor...

\*

"What are you doing here? Thinking again?" I heard Ma'am Sandra's voice.

I turned my head to see her coming closer to me.

"No" I replied simply.

"I know you son, it's high time you stop thinking. By the way, are you done with her?" She went on asking.

"Obviously" I replied and continued with my smoking.

"I have no right to ask but hope you weren't too hard on her?"

I turned to stare at her for a while but didn't say anything.

I took my eyes back to the water.

"You shouldn't handle her roughly, Dillion, she has had a tough life, she doesn't need more of it. So next time please consider this" she cooed before leaving.

TBC

What do you think about this chapter?

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 12

.

© Blessing

.

(Don't hate)

Next day.

Shawna's POV

I flushed my eyes open. My eye lid was still very heavy but feeling the presence of someone in the room I had to open my eyes.

I saw someone cleaning up the room but my vision wasn't really clear.

I groaned a bit and sat up on the bed.

My head felt really heavy and hot too, maybe

because of all the cries, I really cried yesterday.  
Yesterday is not a day I can easily forget.

"Hey" I called my voice coming out low.

The maid turned and stared at me.

"Good morning Shawna, you're up?" She greeted  
and asked.

"Yeah, what..."

"I'm cleaning up your room, ma'am Sandra also said  
to check up on you" the maid cut me in before I  
could ask her what I wanted to ask.

"Okay, go on" I said and brought my legs down to  
the floor.

I made to stand up to go take my bath and see if I  
could get better but could barely walk.

I almost fell but the maid was quick to hold me.

"Careful" she hushed and held me to sit down.

"No no..I wanna have a bath" I told her.

"J ust help me up" I added.



"Oh!" She ohed and helped me up. She assisted me to the bathroom, there was a bathtub there and she left me inside and went out.

I prepared my bath without moving much, the more I move, the more the pains I get.

I brushed my teeth then bathed afterwards.

I think I spent about 2 hours inside the bathroom.

I saw a white towel hanging at the handle, I took it and wrapped it on my body before dragging myself out to the room.

I got to the room and was surprised to see ma'am Sandra.

"Hello child" she cooed.

She was sitting down on the bed, the duvet has been changed to a new one.

"Ma'am Sandra, good morning. Were you waiting for me?" I greeted and asked with a surprised look.

"Come, lemme help you" she patted the bed for me to sit and I went and sat beside her.

What does she wanna help me with? I wondered.

She seems really nice. Is she naturally like this or is she just treating me specially?

"It's hurts doesn't it?" She questioned staring down at my laps.

I looked away and nodded feeling kind of embarrassed.

"I'm sorry about that" she said and sat up. Went to the table there and opened the drawer.

She brought out drugs with a glass of water and offered them to me.

"Take, take two pills each, the pains will decrease in few hours" she said and I collected it without wasting of time.

This is what I need. The pains are just too much, I can't keep up with it.

"A maid is gonna be bringing your food here to you. You won't leave the room at least for today. You won't move about" she stated watching me take two pills out of each drugs she gave me.

"Ok ma'am, thank you" I thanked really grateful.  
Exactly what I needed. I want to sleep all day long.  
She sighed and came to sit back beside me.

"Don't hate or think about what he did so badly.  
Don't hate him" ma'am Sandra said after a brief  
silence and I was forced to look at her straight in  
the eyes.

Why? I mentally asked her.

"I don't" I replied her.

"I know it's hard but really don't hate him. He is not  
as hard as you think he is, situation caused  
everything" she went on.

"I don't hate him ma'am. It's not his fault I got sold  
anyways. It's my parents fault for dying and leaving  
me in the hands of my wicked step father who sold  
me. Honestly, I was relieved that I wasn't sold to an  
old man and I don't get to do any other thing here, I  
work like a slave when I was still with my step  
father. There is no reason I should hate him. I'm just  
serving my purpose" I told her simply trying hard

not to get emotional.

She smiled and held my hands.

"I hope you don't hate him and even if you're lying, I'm sure your opinions will change with time" she cooed then stood up.

"I'll take my leave now. See you tomorrow then" she announced and I nodded before she left.

I sighed and touched my hair.

There is seriously no reason I should hate him. It'll only hurt me more by hating him.

Having a mind free of hate will make life better for me. It'll really make life easy so I will try as much as possible not to ever see what he does as wickedness.

Am a slave now. I should serve my purpose whole heartedly, I thought and didn't realize I was already in tears until I felt it dropping now to my chest.

TBC

What do you guys think?

Is her decision okay?

Why did ma'am Sandra say what she said?

Like, comment and share.

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 13

.

© Blessing

.

(I'm sold)

Couple of weeks later.

Somewhere in Mexico.

Dilly's POV

"Have you prepared the necessary files needed?" I questioned my secretary.

"Yes sir, the documents are all ready" she replied.

"So, when did Dillion say he is gonna be arriving?" I

asked again.

"Um..he must be in the air now, I think he'll arrive before 9pm" she answered.

"Alright, prepare a ride for him. I can't go leave the office,I've got tones of work to do"I said and she replied with a "yes sir" before turning to leave.

I watched as her ass bounce as she walked away. She was on miniskirt. Always trying to seduce me.

I let out a smile but the smile got dissolved immediately a call entered my phone and I saw the name of the person calling.

What's wrong with her now? I thought and grumpily answered the call.

Naomi's POV - Dillion and Dilly's sis.

Oh gosh, where is that jerk head of a driver? Where on Earth did he go to? I thought angrily as I stood watching every other students leave.

I have to return home before Dillion arrives. Where is that jerk? I continued standing there under the hot sun until a Mercedes Benz pulled over in front of me,

but that wasn't my ride. That isn't my car.

The glass of the car got rolled down and I saw the twins there.

Tine and Tina.

I threw my face away to pretend that I didn't see them. I can't talk to them first.

"Hey Naomi, you want a ride, come on" Tine shrieked from inside.

"No thanks" I frowned my face and replied.

"Come on, seems your driver is no where around here and you also seems to be in a haste" she shrieked again.

I rolled my eyes and took slow steady steps towards their car. It was opened for me and I got in.

Tina was the one driving the car.

"Hey Naomi" she greeted.

"Hey" I replied simply.

"Um.. Naomi, I actually have a favour to ask of you" Tine started.

"Yeah, what is it?" I rolled my eyes and asked.

"Well...it's about your brother - Dilly..."

"Yeah, what about him?" I cut her in and asked again.

I saw her gulp as she continued.

"Can you help in getting the both of us closer?" She asked blinking like a Barbie.

I scoffed and turned to look at her directly in the face. Even tho she's about five years older but am still prettier.

"Seriously?" I tilted my head.

"Yeah, can you?" She replied.

"Well no, I don't want you for him. You aren't good enough" I answered blurtly and her eyes almost popped out of it's socket.

"Hold on; Naomi what's that supposed to mean?" She gave me a disgusted face.

"It's simple. You aren't good enough for him" I stated.



"I want someone that doesn't behave like you. Someone more matured."

"Tina's relationship with Dillion didn't work out well, do you think I'll wanna give my other brother away to you? Your character is much more worse. Please stop the car, Dillion is coming over to Mexico today, I can't wait to see him" I smiled at the last part.

Tina screened the car to a halt and the twins kept staring at me with widened eyes as I stepped out of the car and quickly flabed down a cab to take me home.

That driver of mine should consider himself fired.

Valentina's POV

"What?? That brat! How dare she?" Tine screamed immediately Naomi left.

I sighed and started driving again without saying a word. But... did she just make mention of Dillion coming over to Mexico? Today?

\*Inside the jet\*

Shawna's POV

I sat opposite Dillion in their private jet. His eyes are fixed on a magazine.

I don't just know but he said I should follow him to Mexico. He said he wouldn't leave me back in Paris.

This past few days that passed. I haven't been seeing him, like I haven't even spoken to him since that night he deflowered me.

I mistakenly bumped into him three days after that night on the stairs. My heart jumped into my stomach.

I didn't know why but I felt weird seeing him.

He pretended as if he hadn't seen me and he walked past me.

Then a week after that, at night. I saw him walking into the sitting room downstairs -smoking.

His shirt were unbuttoned. He shagged his trouser and spoke on the phone.

I wanted to hide away from him without reasons, maybe I felt that he was gonna ask me to perform my duty in that state so I decided to hide away from

him.

In process of hiding I fell a flower vase there. A very big and classy me.

Hell!! Adrenaline filled my system. I started sweating when he got attracted by the noise and started coming towards me.

Before he got to me, I felt I was gonna pee on my body.

My whole body shook. But when he got to me, he stared down at the broken vase, then to my face.

I saw anger flash in his eyes but it got dissolved immediately it came.

He glared at me without uttering a word, then turned around, placed back the phone to his right ear and started leaving.

Miracles! I believed in it that night.

Then just yesterday, he sent ma'am Sandra to me, he told her to get me ready cause I was gonna follow him to Mexico.

From what ma'am Sandra added, I think we're only

spending two weeks there as he can't leave the mansion and everything they have at Paris without someone guarding it for too long.

But am not just the only one going. What's his name?

This luwis guy with one other strange looking guy is also with us.

Not that the guy is ugly or something, he is also very handsome but the way they dressed is so so bad.

Piercing here and there, tattoo covered his whole body excluding his face, same with luwis.

And speaking about this luwis guy...

He has just been staring at me ever since, it's like there is something on my face.

From the sitting room, to the garage to the airport and then here inside the jet. He hasn't stopped staring at me.

But I don't mind tho, his the least of my thousands problem.

"We're gonna be landing in an hour time, please

tighten your seatbelt" a warning came.

I sighed and thought.

Who do I know here in Mexico?

Hold on: the twins stays here in Mexico right?

Valentine and Valentina.

Yup! They both stay here. My step sisters.

I wonder if I'll get a chance to at least see Valentina.

I've missed her. She's really nice to me. But I think I should seriously stop wishing, I'm sold now.

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 14

.

© Blessing

.

Shawna's POV

An hour later we landed and I smiled inwardly. This is actually the second time I'm flying on air, the first

was when my both parents were still alive. I think I was 5 then too.

It's more beautiful considering the fact that it's a private jet but it felt uncomfortable because I had to sit across Dillion all through.

We entered into a waiting car. There were guards there who ushered us into a black Jeep.

After we'd gotten in, the driver took off. We spent about 3 hours on the road, by then everywhere was already dark.

I smiled again as I stared out through the window.

Everywhere looks beautiful.

Welcome to Mexico Shawna, I told myself. But it could have been way better if, I wasn't a slave. Way better.

After riding for those hours, we finally arrived and got down. I followed Dillion slowly from behind as he walked into a huge house or perhaps its a mansion.

It's seriously good to be wealthy.

Even if it's late already, everywhere looked bright because of the light fixed at every corner of the huge house.

"Dillion!!!" A tiny voice shrieked.

The voice sounds like a female voice.

Then the female ran and came to hug Dillion.

Who is she? I wondered staring from behind trying to see her face.

"I've missed you so much Dillion" the girl after disengaging from the few seconds hug said to him.

"Yeah, it's only been a few weeks" Dillion replied simply not seemingly to miss her too.

"Huh, why are you like this?" The girl said in a sad tone and watched as he started leaving.

The girl saw me and I also saw her face.

Oh! She's that brat. Their sister.

She rolled her eyes at me and without saying a word she ran and held Dillion.

"Did you get anything for me then? Did you?" She

asked him in an excited tone.

"No" I heard Dillion answer her again.

I kept following them, then we got into the sitting room.

"Where is he?" Dillion finally stopped in front of the stairs he was about to climb and asked the girl.

"He's still at the office" she responded.

He then continued climbing leaving the little brat standing and staring at him.

"Dillion, who is she?" She asked him and he stopped.

He turned back to stare at her, his hands tucked into his trouser pocket.

"Follow me" he said in a cold tone referring to me and continued climbing the stairs.

The girl glared at me as I walked pass her.

I wonder what's her deal? Did I do anything to her? Why does she keep frowning and giving me glares?

I'm sure am older than her even if it's might be just two years gap.



I walked behind Dillion until he suddenly stopped in front of a door. "That'll be where you'll stay for now" he stated and continued on his way without turning to even stare at me.

Well, I don't need him staring at me anyways. It's give me chills.

I watched him go to the next door, he opened it and got in. I made to open mine and go in but was stopped by Dillion's sister.

The brat - Naomi.

"Hey stop there, who the heck are you? Why do you keep following my brother everywhere?" She gawked.

Ignore her Shawna. Just open the door and get in, my mind told me but that will be rude of me.

She might even report me to Dillion which is something I don't like.

"My name is Shawna and I heard yours is Naomi" I said.

"Yeah, I Know my name dummy, I just wanna know why you're following my brother" she rolled her eyes

and said.

"Well, he needs me and that's the reason I'm following him" I answered and without wasting any second, I unended the door and got in, then shut it close again.

A wow escaped my lips immediately my eyes ran all over the room. It's beautiful, more beautiful than the one at Paris.

I went and lie quickly on the bed, enjoying the soft feeling.

You might be wondering why I didn't keep thinking and worrying about losing my virginity that way.

It's simply because, I've accepted my fate, learning to accept it makes everything easier for me tho I wouldn't want him to ask me to do anything again.

No no! The pains I faced the first time was unbearable but ma'am Sandra just helped me with the drugs.

S\*x is really not something I want to do in a long time. Definitely!

Luwis's POV

I sat on the bonnet of one of the cars there with Sam.

I'm familiar with this place, well familiar. I think this is the fourth time am coming here again this year with the boss.

With a cigarette in my hand, I lighted it and held it in between my fingers then slowly smoked it with my mind elsewhere.

"Guy! Hey Luwis" I felt Sam call and touch me.

"Yeah...what is it?" I asked facing him.

"I noticed something strange. Why did you keep staring at boss's girl? You kept staring at her without blinking an eye?" He asked staring weirdly at me.

I chuckled and puffed out smoke.

"Isn't it obvious?" I questioned.

"Obvious? You want her?"

"Hmm...I think so, but it's not just the way you put it.

I don't just want her body. It's something more than that and that's what am trying to figure out, I sure want her body but...not just her body,..it's just, I don't even no what am saying" I told him and saw his lips curved into a wild smile.

"You like boss's girl? You better don't" he cracked up at the end and laughed.

"I admit that she's extremely beautiful but you better don't dream of it, whenever you see her, look elsewhere. That way your life is assured" he laughed real hard again making me frown.

"You are an idiot" I hit his shoulder and came down from the car.

"Motherfuck\*ngc\*nt" I cussed again as I sauntered into the mansion.

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 15

.

© Blessing

.

Shawna's POV

I slept peacefully on the soft bed until I felt a tap on my thighs. I opened my eyes and rubbed the sleep away.

"Miss, you're been called to the dinning" a soft voice said.

I stared around the room until my eyes landed on the pretty maid there. I sat up properly to comprehend what she said.

"Dinning?" I asked.

"Yes miss, you're been called"she confirmed.

"Um.. okay" I put on the flip flop I saw by the bed side and followed her slowly from behind.

She took me down the stairs and to the large dinning there. There, I saw Dillion. His twin brother, Dilly, their sister and Luwis with the other unknown guy.

I immediately felt shy. I've never eaten on the same table with them before.

Why? Why can't they just serve me my own meal separately? I thought as I dragged my feet to an empty seat far from the siblings and sat down.

A maid dishing out the meals served me mine and I started eating slowly. My eyes didn't leave my plate, it just couldn't.

"But Dilly, why must we eat on the same table with them? Isn't it supposed to be just us?" She queried.

"Can't you just shut up and let me eat in f\*\*k\*ng peace? Must you always grouse over every thing?" Dilly answered her.

Yes, I could tell that it wasn't Dillion because their voice sounds different, not exactly different tho.

"Just shut up okay?" The guy beside me, the one with Luwis added.

"You!!" Naomi screamed.

I raised my eyes up to stare at her raging eyes.

"How dare you?" She fired then stood up and went to hit his head.

The guy only laughed together with luwis which

obviously made Naomi so angry.

She then ran away.

Silence was the next thing that happened.

I glanced at Dillion's face and it was like he wasn't even here the whole time, it's like he is in another world.

It didn't take up to 10 minutes, he stood up and also left the dinning table followed by Luwis and that guy, I still don't no his name.

I made to also leave but Dilly's voice stopped me.

"Sit!" He's voice sounded so strict which made my heart beat faster.

I sat down back and stared at him wondering why he'd stopped me.

"You're Shawna right?" He questioned, his eyes on his food.

"Ye..yes.."I stuttered.

"Yes what? Weren't you taught how to respond to someone older than you are? How old are you

anyways?" He questioned again.

"I'm almost 20, I'll be 20 soon" I replied.

"Is that how you have been replying Dillion?" His question made me dumbfounded.

"Yes" I replied still.

He stopped eating and glared at me for a while before he continued.

"Anyways, how many times has he had s\*x with you?" The answer made me dumbfounded again.

Like why all these uncomfortable questions and he looks so much like Dillion, it's creepy.

"On..once" I responded and heard him scoff immediately.

"Once?" He asked sounding surprised.

"Yes sir" I confirmed.

"Okay, you can leave" he allowed.

I stood and then left the dining, I turned back at some point to stare at him and found him staring intensely at me, I quickly concentrated on where I



was heading to and hastened my steps.

Soon I got to my room.

Dillion's POV

I'll be handing it over to you tomorrow by 2:00, I need 30 built men from you, you know that's the deal, I said into the phone.

Of course Dillion, I didn't forget, so tomorrow then.

Yeah

And the line went dead.

The door opened almost immediately the call ended and Naomi showed up.

"What is it?" I queried.

"Are you going somewhere tomorrow?" She asked instead.

"I didn't come here for jokes, I came here for business Naomi. It's stupid of you to ask that" I groaned.

"Why is today so annoying? I thought it'll be very interesting. I thought you were gonna make me

happy."

"You haven't changed, I thought you might have considering the fact you got worried that our plane might have crashed. I thought you started caring" she pouted and said.

I turn away from her without a word and opened up my laptop. Need to check how Dilly is running the company over here.

She kept ranting nonsense I didn't care to listen to but stopped handling my laptop immediately she mentioned the name Valentina. I was forced to look at her and a naughty smile crept up her lips immediately she knew she'd gotten my attention.

Shawna's POV

I sat in my room, on a small couch there admiring the beauty of the room when a knock suddenly came at the door.

I went to open the door and I saw Luwis there.

He wasn't putting on a shirt, just a short. My eyes ran all over his manly body, tattoo covered it up.

"Hi Miss" his voice came out soft and he winked at me.

"Can I come in?" He asked sounding so polite.

"Um...I..um..yeah, yeah" I opened the door more widely then stepped out of the way for him to come in.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 16

.

© Blessing

.

(Who is she?)

Writer's POV

Few hours back to when Dillion kissed Shawna.

Luwis and Sam happened to be in one of the cars inside the garage.

Luwis had originally made to open the car and come down but stopped when he saw Dillion place his lips on Shawna's forehead. He stopped moving immediately, his eyes fixed on them both.

And then Dillion kissed Shawna on her lips. His hands behind her, one at the back of her head and one at her waist side.

The incident surprised and at the same time angered Luwis.

"Oh my gosh! Did you see that?" Sam whispered touching Luwis and pointing to Dillion.

"Oh my!" Sam gasped again seeing how deep and slow the kiss is going. He was sure that he's boss was really enjoying himself but with some feelings attached.

Luwis kept watching. He felt so jealous and anger burnt inside of him.

Sam kept tugging Luwis but luwis didn't move.

Sam then turned to look at Luwis. He could see anger in his eyes, then he remembered that Luwis

actually has feelings for Shawna. He has forgotten about that in a while.

"Okay, I'll just leave you be" Sam said and got off the car.

By then Dillion already left and Shawna was also getting into the house.

The thought remained in Luwis mind. He knows he can't fight for Shawna against his boss and it looked like there was something else in him when he kissed Shawna.

But he could use other tricky ways to get her and if it doesn't work. Well I have no other option, he thought out loud.

"I'll take her by force."

\*\*

Few minutes before Dillion arrived at the mansion with Vivian.

Shawna sat happily with Ma'am Sandra narrating the whole tale of her outing with Dillion. She couldn't find other maids other than Beatrice, like all

the maids has disappeared.

She had asked where they were and she was told that they all took a leave. It had surprised Shawna but she remembered, no wonder that maid from earlier was so happy.

"So, he really spoke to his client that way because the man was actually trying to flirt with you?"

Ma'am Sandra asked her to be sure.

"Yes, he got so angered. I am sure of it" Shawna replied and then ma'am Sandra nodded in deep thoughts.

"That's another development then I guess" ma'am Sandra mumbled.

"What? What did you say?" Shawna asked but the sound of car hones couldn't let her wait.

"It must be him, today has n't ended, has it?" She said excitedly standing up on her feet and then rushing outside to the entrance, she remembered the kiss.

Her cheeks flushed for some unknown reason to

her.

She stood there waiting for him to show up and he finally did.

With wide smiles on her face, she wanted to say something but the person walking closely behind him made her smiles disappear instantly.

Who is she? She wondered.

Dillion didn't notice her until he got to the entrance and was about to get in but Vivian noticed the girl who's face stopped smiling on seeing her.

Vivian also wondered.

Who is she?

Dillion on his own was hoping he wouldn't see Shawna until the next day but there she is.

He stopped facing her.

Shawna's gaze fell to the floor as all the happiness she felt suddenly vanished from her system.

She doesn't know why but she felt bad about the lady beside Dillion who was staring at her.

The lady looked so so beautiful and also classy.

This can't be his sister? No, she doesn't look like one. She thought.

Then can she be his cousin? I don't think so either.

Then perhaps, his girlfriend? At the thought she raised her head up quickly and stared past Dillion to Vivian.

Dillion on noticing Shawna's eyes on Vivian explained.

"She's a guest, she will be staying here for a few days" Dillion said not really knowing why he explained.

The real Dillion doesn't owe a soul an explanation.

He thought about the reason he even explained to her and then shook his head.

This madness I'm developing has to stop, he thought and walked past her inside.

Vivian glared at Shawna. She was tall, almost Dillion's height.



Shawna just looked up at Vivian without uttering a word. She turned and entered back into the house going to meet Ma'am Sandra to ask her about Dillion's visitor but on her way to the kitchen she bumped into Luwis.

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 17-18

.

© Blessing

.

(Noddles)

Shawna's POV

We drove for a very long while before we arrived a road, it was really lonely. Neither cars nor humans couldn't be seen but I sighted a black van with another black Jeep ahead.

Sam stopped in front of the vehicles then got out.

Luwis brought out that briefcase that contains

whitish substance. The one I'd taken from that old man.

He handed it to me.

"The boss asked you to personally hand it over to them" he stated.

"Just act normal but walk classy and hand it over to the guy in their middle" he continued.

Then he brought out a black eyeshade and wore it on me by himself making me shift a bit.

He opened the car door for me and I stepped out, he came out after I'd wearing his own eyeshade.

"Where is it?" A guy who was smoking in between two other guys asked.

"Go, hand it over to him" Luwis whispered to me and I gulped hard and started together those guys, walking as sexy as I could.

I think I understand this job. They are into illegal dealings and you must act like them.

I got to their front and stretched forth the briefcase to them.

The one in the middle collected it from me, he eyes running all over my body.

He handed it over to the guy on his left.

The guy opened it and whispered something to him.

"We'll meet again beauty" he winked at me and they all got into their vehicle and zoomed off.

I removed my sunshade immediately and turned to see Luwis approaching me.

"You acted well" he said and touched my shoulder.

"Did you get the clip?" He turned towards Sam and asked.

"Yes" Sam replied bringing out a hidden camera with him.

"Okay good, now that it's done. Lemme take you somewhere you'll love" he said and grabbed my hand.

He helped me into the car, got into the driver's sit and ignited the engine.

Sam who was still busy with the camera turned to

stare at him.

"Hey, what are you doing?" His eyes widened.

Luwis didn't reply him but started driving away.

"Hey!! Hey!!" The guy yelled.

Luwis brought his hand out from the window and bid him goodbye.

"Sweet walk" he added with laughter.

"Screw you! Screw you okay!?" Sam yelled obviously annoyed.

"Why did you do that?" I asked him.

"He has done it to me before, just paying him back" Luwis answered chuckling.

"But he is obviously angry, what if he does something more dangerous to you?" I asked again.

He turned and stared at me.

"Are you worried about me?" He inquired.

"Um..it's just that, it won't be okay if something happens to you" I cooed.

"Well, you don't have to worry. He is actually my brother, he won't do anything!" He smirked.

"But are you really worried about me, huh?" He chuckled making me shy.

"Well...since you're my friend now, I wouldn't want you to get into trouble" I said under my breathe.

"I'm glad, thanks for caring but I want you to hold on tightly" he said and before I could process what he said he increased the speed of the car.

I didn't know when I screamed out so loud in fear but he only laughed.

Geez! Does he want me dead?

50 minutes later.

He drove into a classy restaurant and parked at the garage area.

"Come here" he cooed arranging his hair.

I came down and arranged my dress and hair. Then took a long stare at the restaurant.

"Really? A Noddles restaurant?" I asked reading the

inscription.

"Yeah, when last did you eat it? It's been really long. Wanna try it out with you or...don't you like it?" He rested on the car and asked.

"Of course I like it, it used to be my every day meal" I mumbled the last part.

Back then, when I was still with my step father. I only eat Noddles, morning afternoon and evening.

We got into the restaurant and he ordered it for two.

We sat down close to the window side facing each other.

"While we wait for them to serve us the Noddles. Can you tell me more about yourself? As a new friend, I need to know" he inquired.

I gulped hard as I stared down at the table.

I don't want to start narrating my terrible life to him. I don't want to talk about it.

"Hey, is something wrong?" He questioned probably noticing my mood.

"Um..No, why don't we talk about you instead? Have you been working for the young master for long? Like since when because I do see you around the mansion some times?" I inquired.

"Um...well, you see the boss..well I started working for him since the age of ...um.. I think 9, it's been so long" I noticed he wasn't soo comfortable as he answered me.

"9? What about your parents? They let you do such jobs?" I curiously asked again.

"I don't have parents, I mean I don't know them. Was raised by my grandmother" he responded.

"Oh!" I mouthed.

"Let's eat" he quickly said when he noticed that I was about asking another question. A waitress already arrived our table.

She placed down our orders in front of us but... I noticed Luwis eyes at the entrance when I was about to start eating.

My eyes followed his eyes and I saw.....

The chopstick I'd taken fell off my hand immediately I saw him.

Dillion! He was with Naomi but he wasn't looking at our direction.

Oh good lord!

My heart started beating loudly as I suddenly became scared.

"Let's....." I was about to say to Luwis but Naomi's eyes met with mine.

She quickly made Dillion turn to our direction and an unexplainable look crept into his face.

Oh, don't tell me he is angry.

.

Shawna's POV

I made to stand up because of how scared I got but was held down by Luwis.

I took my eyes to look at him immediately.

"J ust pretend you didn't see him" he mumbled.



Huh!

How can I pretend not to see him? I thought with other things running inside my head.

"Just sit down, trust me" he confirmed sounding so convincing.

And I did, I took my eyes back to the booth but didn't see Dillion and Naomi there again. Dillion had started leaving with Naomi running after him.

It made me relieved a bit but still I'm very much scared. He might be really angry.

Naomi's POV.

"Come on Dillion, you told me you were gonna sit and watch me out. Why did you order it out? Why are you doing this to me again?" I half yelled as I followed him out of the Noddles restaurant.

I had actually pleaded seriously with him to take me to this Noddles restaurant. He grumpily brings me here whenever he's around so I didn't want this his visit to be different. I pleaded and even refused to leave his bathroom when he wanted to take his bath.

He had gotten really angry that I disobeyed him but still saw how determined I was and then promised to bring me here when he's done bathing. That was how I successfully did it but now....

He got into the car we came with.

I opened the other side and got in before he could drive off. He's kind of angry now.

Not that he really shows it but I think he's quit angry.

Why did he's mood suddenly change? Is it because of that lady? I still don't no why she's following him until now.

I know Dillion won't answer me so I didn't even bother asking him. I have to find out. Is she working for him?

But...he doesn't have female workers. So whats her real business or...a lady close to him can either be Girlfriend or pleasure girl?

Oh my! It's one of the two. I really have to find out.

I turned to stare at him as he drove out of the restaurant speedily. Within ten minutes we got to

the quarters.

"Get off" he snarled unlocking the doors. He didn't drive in.

"Um...we haven't gotten in..."

"I said get off Naomi, you can walk the rest" he groaned and I quickly got off.

I watched him as he reversed and started out again.

Where is he going to?

Shawna's POV

We finished with the Noddles and without wasting of time I got up.

I didn't wanna spend more time outside.

Luwis gaze followed me.

"Won't you at least let the Noddles digest?" He asked with a perked up brow.

"No, luwis let's just go. Let's leave" I hurried him up and he also got up.

"If you say so" I noticed he looked displeased at my

act but what can I do?

I'm not a free human anymore. I'm supposed to only be where my owner orders me to go but I'm just....

Oh geez!

He paid to the cashier and soon we were headed back. He didn't say a word till we arrived making me feel guilty.

Should I just apologize for rushing him? He is clearly angry.

He opened the car and got off. I did after him.

"Luwis" I called before he could leave.

"Thanks for the Noddles, i'm sorry for my earlier behaviour too. I'll try to make it up to you" I mumbled the last part not sure if that will ever happen.

Will I ever step out without it been ordered by Dillion. Oh I doubt that.

He smiled tho I know it's a forced one.

"I should be thanking you. Thanks for following me

to the Noddles restaurant" he thanked and I nodded then sighed and started up.

Minutes earlier.

Naomi's POV

Immediately Dillion left, I passed through the first security gate. I just had to stand in front of the gate and allow the camera scan me. It did and the gate automatically gave way.

I walked in elegantly and soon got to the second gate to see that jerk!

Idiotic Sam! He grinned and stood up on his feet because he was formally sitting down at the front gate.

"I've been waiting since I saw you pass the first gate" he said.

"Why were you waiting for me?" I huffed and threw my face away.

"Well, let's say...I felt like pestering you" he answered smiling.

"I don't need jerks like you to waist time on, I got

better things to do" I scoffed and made to pass him but he didn't allow me.

"Are you sick upstairs? Stop blocking me. You're total nutcase!" I screamed, pissed.

"I'm happy to be one for you Barbie" he winked which got me really pissed.

I hit his chest with my fist severally but it's was as if he didn't feel it.

"J erk!!!!!!! I'll kill you!!!" I screamed again but he only bursted into a hilarious laughter.

"Geez! I hate you" I grumpily said then pushed him aside and started walk running.

I didn't want him to catch up with me but he did.

"You remember that day you hugged me because of how scared you were of bugs, you looked scared seeing a bud with luwis and the next you jumped on me and held me so tight. Now I look at the same girl, she saids she'll kill me??" He pointed to his chest and laughed again which made it so irritating.

"I was only 6 years old then, stop making fun of

me!" I defended tired of his mockeries but he started another round of laughter which made it so unbearable for me that I took to my heels.

Which day will he stop his nonsense? Which day will he stop pissing me off. Oh gosh I'm so dead.

Hours later.

Shawna POV

I stood outside my room restlessly waiting for Dillion's return.

I was told by one of the maids that he isn't around so I waited for him.

I can't help. That look. That glare.

I can't just ignore him totally then go to bed. I want to know if he's mad or not.

Without knowing I won't be able to sleep.

I don't necessarily have to ask him. Just his actions and words will show it.

I stood waiting. He is gonna pass my door before he gets to his so there is no way that I might have

missed him.

Damn it's getting extremely late. Why isn't he coming back?

I continued waiting restlessly ignoring the time until I heard footsteps and saw him approaching.

My heart sank deep into my stomach as I watched him. In fear and anxiety.

I think my adrenaline is acting up too much.

Increased heart beat, dilation of pupil, I get them all the time, especially when I was still with my step father.

Whenever he steps into the house drunk I get so scared of what he will do next.

I sometimes experience pains in my chest all because of fear and now this fear in me again and it's too much.

It got really extreme when he got to where I was and stopped - his cold eyes fixed on me.

TBC



## Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 19-20

.

(Not a punishment)

Luwis's POV

The door opened and Sam came in wearing a crazy smile on.

What is it? You're disturbing me. I need to think, I scowled.

"Why has the boss's girl been standing outside her room?" He ignored my frowns and came to sit beside me.

"She has been standing outside her room?" I feebly asked.

"Yes. But where did you two go to? Where did you take her to?" He asked.

"Is he around? The boss?" I asked instead.

"Nope, haven't seen him but..."

"Get out Sam. Just get out, I need my space" I interrupted him.

Shawna's POV

I took my eyes immediately to the floor. I aren't supposed to stare back at him.

He didn't utter a word, he started leaving.

But..I think he wants me to follow him. He didn't say it but I know of it.

Oh gosh! Hope he is not too angry cause now I know he is angry but I just hope it's not much.

I sauntered behind him with my head low until he got to his door. He opened it and got in leaving the door opened.

I heaved a sigh and followed him in.

He went and stood in front of his mirror working on his shirt buttons which made me really nervous and more scared.

Why isn't he saying anything? Should I just maybe

apologize? It might be better that way.

With my eyes still fixed on the floor I opened my mouth to apologise but was met with a resounding slap which almost threw me on the floor.

Christ!!

I took a step backwards immediately as tears started streaming down my eyes.

"Don't utter a word!" He snapped.

How did he know that I was about to apologise?

Oh goodness!

I held tightly unto my burning cheeks in so much pain.

He had slapped me only once but I think it's affected my head and chest cause I immediately started feeling pains.

Then he walked towards another door in the room and got in.

I bent my head and let out a squeak.

Oh gosh! I think am in real trouble. He looks more

angry than the time I had unknowingly vomited on him.

He told me not to get on his nerves.

Geez, I shouldn't have pretended not to see him like Luwis advised. No! I shouldn't have even agreed for him to take me there.

He came out from the room and I perked at his face with one eye. He was holding a white towel, he came to me and threw it carelessly but thank goodness I caught it.

"Make use of the bathroom, five minutes" his voice came out hard.

I immediately turned towards the supposed bathroom and got in. I faced the big mirror there and let out the tears I was trying to hold back.

The mark of the slap imprinted itself clearly on my face but wait....

Did he just ask me to bath?? Does that...does that mean?

Oh my goodness! And he gave me five minutes. I've

wasted two minutes already.

Good lord!

I quickly turned on the shower with my clothes already off I let the water wash me. In just two minutes, I turned off the shower and made to put on my clothes back but stopped.

Will there be need to put it on? There won't.

I tied the towel round my body. Then picked up my clothes and went out to the room.

He was sitting on the bed with a cigarette with him, smoking.

I gulped down hard and didn't no the next thing to do.

Damn! Should I just keep the clothes down? I thought then saw the couch there. I kept the clothes on top of it preparing my mind for what's coming.

I will try as much as possible not to cry.

He didn't look at me but continued smoking until about 10 minutes passed. He finished up the particular stick he was holding and took another

one.

"Go stand in front of the mirror, your hands holding the table" he rasped and my heart skipped.

I went and did as he instructed. Why in front of the mirror? What exactly is he trying to prove?

I saw him stand up from the bed and immediately shut my eyes close.

Okay, it's about to start Shawna. You can do it! I told myself trying to get rid of my fears.

My hands were literally shaking as I held onto the table.

"Why is the towel still wrapped around you?" He asked and I snapped my eyes open.

He was standing behind me. Staring at me through the mirror.

My hands immediately went to the towel and I loosened it without a second thought. I made to close my eyes but he stopped me.

"Keep your eyes open!" He ordered and I did. My heart pounding.

I tried not to look at him as he worked on his trousers. My eyes were fixed down on the table.

Then his hands held my waist and made me shout out my ass.

The next was that, I felt his dick touching my asshole. It made me jerk a bit but I controlled myself.

"Bear in mind that this is not a punishment. I'll punish you at my own time" I heard him say, I raised my eyes up to stare at him through the mirror wondering what he really meant.

I only snapped out of my thought when I felt his dick going deep into my asshole. Of course forcefully.

.

(So scared)

Shawna's POV

I thought I'd be able to handle it. I thought I'll be able to face it when he started but I realized as it went on that I might actually pass out if he continues.

I held unto the table more firmly as not to fall as he went in and out of me. Tears strolled down my eyes and I bit my lips together to prevent me from crying out. I could only whimper and sniff in.

My eyes remained fixed on the table, I didn't want to look at the mirror. I know he wants me to see how sorrowful I look.

He wants me to learn my lessons but this is not really a punishment? What else is more hurtful than this? Is there something more hurtful than what he is really doing to me right now? I doubt it!

I didn't no how long he spent but I know he spent a lot of time before he made me turn to face him this time.

I felt embarrassed, ashamed, sad, bittered. I felt pains because a guy was staring and screwing me like he wants.

Like a piece of trash.

This time he lifted my one leg up and placed it on top of the chair. The chair he sits on while facing the mirror.



Then he came into me in that position, so forcefully making me scream.

This is the second time yet it hurts like this. I thought it was gonna end that first time.

Why does it still hurt so much?

He didn't seem to care about my pains as he kept driving in and out. I continued crying, I continued holding myself. I continued enduring the pains until my both legs started shaking especially the one on top of the chair.

Even tho sweats already covered his whole body, he doesn't look like he has even started which made me feel worse.

Please just let him get tired. This is the only goddamn way I'll be free from him.

But he didn't, he continued and continued. I started getting extremely tired. My breathing started getting weaker. I couldn't breath fast anymore and sweats has equally covered my body.

My legs felt like they aren't part of my body

anymore, I couldn't really feel them. My V hurts so much, even from the back.

I don't know if he finally noticed how weak I was but he stopped screwing me. He pulled out of me. I didn't even look at him although. My eyes were fixed in the ceiling starting from the time he turned me to face him.

I fell completely exhausted on the chair.

I saw him walk away and I closed my eyes to catch my breath for about 10 minutes before I got up. I made to put on my clothes and saw his release on my thighs. I ignored it and wore my clothes before staggering to my room.

I could barely walk. My legs continued shaking till I got to my room and threw myself on the bed then drifted into sleep.

*\*Early Next day\**

I felt a tap on my body and I threw my eyes opened to see a maid. She was putting on a smile.

I blinked and sat up on the bed.

"Mr Dillion wants you to meet him in 20 minutes" she stated.

"Mr...Dillion" I asked wide eyes.

"Yes" she answered and left immediately.

Oh gosh, what is it again? What does he wants? I wondered and made to rush to the bathroom but felt extreme pains around my lower body.

I winched out loudly recalling the reason why I'm feeling so much pain.

Gosh, where are the drugs ma'am Sandra packed into my bags? I thought and dragged my legs down to the floor.

The pains seemed to have tripled.

Oh goodness! And he asked me to meet him in 20 minutes. I don't want to get on his nerves again. I'll manage.

I quickly brought out the drugs and took two pills from each packet, drank a little quantity of water then dragged myself into the bathroom.

I let water wash me. I didn't scrub with sponge or

use soap. I guess I'll have to bath again later.

I rushed out of the bathroom and found a short and shirt to wear. I put them on and dragged myself out to his room.

I couldn't walk properly tho. J ust walking funny.

I knocked on his door but didn't hear a reply. I knocked again, again and again but didn't hear a movement.

What is this again? Gosh! Why isn't he answering when he was the one that sent for me? I thought feeling so so.... I don't even know how am feeling.

How am I supposed to feel?

I stood there waiting for him to eventually reply. He might be purposely doing this.

I kept standing there until a maid walked by and stopped.

'Mr Dillion is outside in the garage. He said to get you" she stated.

Oh goodness! So he wasn't here all along?

"Okay" I mouthed and followed her out to the garage.

He looked annoyed even seeing me.

"When will you ever learn to obey?" He groaned and started walking to a particular side. I walked after him and we entered a different building.

It looks like a court. He picked up a tennis ball.

"Go over there" he pointed to the extreme end of the court and I obeyed.

He threw the ball up in the air and played it right at me. I kept looking at the ball coming at me wondering what I should do with it until it got to me and hit me right in the forehead.

I fell flat on the floor and my head spin.

Oh my goodness! Isn't this death? My legs, waist and now my head?

"Bring it to me now!" He rasped out and I managed to stand up.

"Come on, fast!" He snapped and I rushed faster and gave the ball to him.

He didn't even wait for me to get to the end. He played it again and it's hits me but I didn't fall this time. It hit me near my spine in the back.

I winched and squatted.

"Be fast! Give me the ball" he screamed and I picked it up and gave it to him. My now tears already covered my eyes.

Maybe this is how he wants to punish me.

"I won't ever disobey you again, please stop" I pleaded with him when he had hit me with the ball for the tenth times.

My whole body screamed pain!

He pretended not to hear me and kept on going but that was just minor. I started feeling the real pain when we left there and went to another court. I don't really know what it's used for but he asked me to hold on to a small shade.

I held it and raised it like he instructed. He took out a gun and my heart skipped.

A gun? I thought and felt a light pain in my chest

region immediately.

He pointed it at me and my hands started shaking in the air.

I didn't know when I threw the shade he gave me away, but not minding what I did. He shot! He shot it directly at me and I felt a my chest shattering into pity pieces.

I fell on my knees immediately and covered my ears with both hands.

I felt scared. So scared. Does he wanna kill me this way?

"Please forgive me" I cried painfully on my knees.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 21-22

.

© Blessing

.

(Andrew)

Shawna's POV

I stayed with my hands still covering my ears in tears.

He kept shooting it but non of the bullet met me.

I continued pleading tho I aren't sure he was even listening to me.

I stopped hearing the gun shots and I looked up to see him leaving.

I made to also stand up but I started feeling extreme pain in the chest again which made me to stay put. I placed my hand on my chest and cried out more in pains.

Oh goodness! The pain hooked me real well. Didn't allow me to move.

I could only cry out.

I heard footsteps coming and lifted my eyes to see Luwis.



"Hey, are you okay?" He asked and squatted beside me.

"I'm...okay" I tried standing up but couldn't.

I didn't even know what happened next but I found myself in his arms.

"What? What are you doing?" I asked alarmed.

"You don't look good" he stated.

"No...no..." I tried making him stop but he didn't.

I became scared. What if Dillion gets angry again? What if he sees us?

But thankfully I didn't see him till luwis successfully took me to my room and kept me on the bed.

"Were you that scared? That wasn't even a real gun. It can't kill you. He is only using it for training. You should have just held the shade like he instructed, he was targeting it not you" he asked and said.

"That wasn't a real gun?" I asked.

"Of course. You should calm down now alright. He won't kill you, you might die because of fear, just

like the other girls he had done it to before" he cooed.

I turned over on the bed and backed him. Didn't wanna hear more tho I'm relieved he doesn't have plans on killing me.

"Thanks, you can leave now" I said simply.

"But are you really okay? I could take you to the...."

"No!! I'm fine" I interrupted him firmly.

"Okay" I heard him mumble then heard the door close afterwards.

I sighed and touched my chest. My heart is still rasing fast but not like before.

I should have been told earlier then I couldn't have been this scared. I thought he was gonna kill me this way, really.

Naomi's POV

I heard a knock on my door.

"What is it?" I answered.

"It's me Sam" Sam's voice said. The door pushed

open and he came in.

"I asked what is it, I didn't ask you to tell me your name or come in" I frowned.

"Well yeah, but I'm here now" he responded.

"So again, what do you want?" I questioned.

"Well...I'm gonna be driving you to school today, just came to inform you that" he replied.

"Yeah, you can leave....hold on Sam. I wanna ask you something" I said turning fully to face him.

He's eyes showed excitement.

"What? You're free to ask."

"Well..that Shawna, is she my brother's girlfriend?" I inquired.

"No,why do you ask?"

"Then, is she his s\*x slave?" I further asked.

"You look like you're up to something. Why do you care?" It was his turn to frown.

"Well simply because I'm his sister" I answered.

"Well yeah, I'll be waiting for you at the garage" he added and left.

Hmm....

So she's just his property? Interesting!

Few hours later.

At school.

"Well well well. Who do we have here?" I heard one of the silly s\*ut yell like the bit\*h she is.

I rolled my eyes at her and her friends and tried walking away but she blocked my way.

"Where do you think you're going spoilt brat? You told your driver to splash mud water on me sometimes ago. Think I have forgotten, huh?" She poked my chest with one finger.

"Hey! Don't touch me alright bit\*h! I don't know what you're talking about" I rolled my eyes again at her.

She raised her hand up and tried slapping me but someone held her hand from behind.

"I don't like being mean to ladies, don't try me" I

heard him say.

"Andrew!!" I looked at him and called.

He winked at me and freed the bit\*h's hand.

I immediately ran to him and hugged him.

"Andrew" I called as he hugged me back.

"Hello princess, heard you started college. Your education is extremely fast" he cooed while stroking my back.

"Yes I know. I have to help out Dilly with the company. I have to finish fast In other to help" I answered pulling out from the hug.

"You're back?" I asked.

"Well yeah, heard Dillion is around. Was just coming from the company, met Dilly" he said.

"Oh yeah. Dillion is around but not for long tho" I smiled and said.

He is the only guy I respect so much other than my two brothers. He is really cute and extremely nice but unfortunately I think he has a girlfriend tho I'm

not sure he has one now but he used to have then.

"Your two brothers had to abandon school, I also did but I'm back to finish up. I'll protect you from now on then, from those bad bi\*\*he's" he said and I grinned.

I smiled and felt like hugging him again but didn't. Don't wanna appear too cheap and beside he looks at me like a kid, a little sis. But what he doesn't know is that I've always liked him.

"Okay, lemme escort you to your class, seems lessons are about to start" he stated and I held his hand as he escorted me.

As we were about to enter class Tina or Tine, I don't really know showed up.

"Hi Tina" Andrew greeted and they both hugged each other which made me frown.

"Wow! You're back Andrew" she exclaimed.

"Yeah, lucky huh! Happy to see me?" He questioned spreading his arms apart and they both laughed.

Her eyes drifted to me but she didn't say anything.

"I'll go now, see you later so we can catch up" she said to him and started leaving.

He kept staring at her until she vanished.

"Isn't she looking extremely beautiful than before?" He turned to me and asked.

"She's the most ugliest lady in the whole universe" I shouted angrily and got into the class obviously leaving him surprised.

Oh Andrew! He's really back.

.

(Who is she?)

Hours later.

Shawna's POV

I rolled about on the bed happy that no one disturbed me for the past few hours but I was feeling really hungry.

I can't hold it anymore.

I sat up on the bed and slowly dragged my foot down to the floor, wore my flip flop and reached for

the door.

My body still aches. The pains haven't disappeared at all even after soo many hours. Despite my long hour sleep, I'm still feeling a bit down. I feel sick.

Yeah, why shouldn't I? But I took pills this morning.

Yeah, pills without food. Maybe if I eat something, I'll stop feeling sick.

I made my way down the stairs and luckily saw a maid that is about climbing the stairs.

"Um..sorry miss, but can I get something to eat?" I asked her sounding as polite as possible.

"Yeah, you can, follow me" she replied and turned towards the left side. I followed her and she entered into a kitchen.

"What will you like to eat miss? I'll prepare it for you."

"Um..you choose, but I want a very fast food" I answered.

"Um..I guess I'll have to go for Chicken Alfredo pasta" she said.



"Yeah that will be so nice miss" I beamed and she nodded.

"You can wait at the dinning over there" she pointed out and I nodded.

"Thanks" I thanked and left for the dinning.

I sat down in satisfaction that I'll soon be getting something to eat. Oh geez I'm extremely hungry.

I couldn't come down earlier, I was kind of scared to bomb into either Dillion or Luwis. Especially Dillion, I didn't want him to see me so I stayed still wallowing in hunger.

After some minutes I started perceiving the aroma of the chicken she was boiling, it made my tummy rumble the more. It made me more hungry that I had to clunch unto my tummy.

"Yeah...Lol" I heard voices.

A male and a female voice.

They were laughing so loudly.

I had to strain my neck to see them Walk pass the dinning without noticing me.

A guy with Naomi and Sam following them closely. I could see a big frown on Sam's face. I wonder why tho.

But who is that guy?

Well it's non of my business.

After 20 minutes, the maid finally appeared with a tray.

Gosh! Finally!

I stood up immediately and collected the tray from her.

"Thanks" I cooed over excited.

Actually this should be the second time I'll be having chicken Alfredo. And it's so delicious.

I settled down at once and dugged into my meal.

Gosh! So delicious, I licked my lips as I ate hungrily ignoring the fact that the meal was so hot.

It was when the maid started laughing that I looked up to see her still standing there.

Okay, why isn't she going?

"Take it easy, you might burn your tongue" she teased and laughed again but it wasn't funny. I'm getting more hungry.

I continued eating ignoring her and 30 minutes later I finished up.

I took the used plates with the tray to the kitchen and a maid there asked me to leave it to her.

I then turned towards the dispenser and took out enough quantity of water and gulped it all down. I felt satisfied immediately and happy.

Oh goodness! I'm relieved that I didn't die of hunger.

I started climbing the stairs to go back up. Almost getting to my room, I heard and saw a guy, the guy with Naomi. He was on a call.

I quickly opened the door and got in before he could get to my side.

He looks free here. Is he perhaps their cousin?

Well, it's non of my business.

\*At night.\*

Dillion's POV

I stood close to the window side smoking and drinking at the same time when the door suddenly opened revealing Andrew.

I turned back to face the window after realizing that he was the one.

"Hey, you're just getting back. Damn! I've been here since noon waiting for you" he said and came to stand beside me.

"Yeah" I mouthed and he scoffed.

"Yeah? Is that a welcome? You haven't changed!"

"I guess" I responded.

"I'll ignore your behaviour like I've always had" he said and I spared him a glance.

"Always had? You're a pain in the ass" I rolled my eyes and said.

"Yeah whatever! So, how is it going? Have you gotten a solid ground yet?" He questioned.

"Almost, just need about 50 more men":I replied

simply.

"Hmm....you are still going ahead with this your revenge plan? Well, I won't try to convince you otherwise since your mind is already made up" he said and I shook my head.

"No one can change my mind actually" I added.

"So, heard you're no longer with Valentina, man. Why did you break up with such beauty?" He queried.

"I didn't, she did" I responded.

"Really? You sure. I trust her more than you tho" he asked peering into my face.

"But have you seen her lately. Damn! Her beauty seems to have added....but wait...I saw another pretty Angel entering a room few feet away from your room. Who the hell is she?" He inquired sounding more curious.

I kept mute knowing who he was referring to.

"Let's go down for dinner" I replied instead leaving him still staring curiously at me.

He'll get to see her again anyways.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 23-24

.

© Blessing

.

(Why are you avoiding me?)

Shawna's POV

I stayed inside my room thinking. I just thinking about anything until I heard a knock.

"Who..who is it?" I asked staring at the door. The door opened and Luwis showed up.

"What do you want?" I asked my eyes glittering.

"Well, it's time for dinner. I just decided to get you myself" he said.

"Um..um..I need to use the bathroom, you can leave.

I'll join you and thanks" I said standing up on my feet.

I got to the bathroom door and tried going in but turned to see him still standing there leaning on the door.

I turned to ask him.

"Aren't you leaving? You can leave, I'll join you guys."

But instead he started approaching me. He got to where I stood and stopped.

"Why do I have this feeling that you're actually avoiding me? Did I do anything wrong? Did he get mad at you too much? I thought we were friends" he cooed starring directly into my eyes.

I blinked and took my eyes away from him.

"No.. no, of course not, just wanna wash my face then come down afterwards" I answered.

"Well wash your face, I can wait" he stated then took few steps backward.

Gosh! I don't even no how to avoid him.

I nodded and entered into the bathroom then washed my face.

I stared at the mirror there and sighed. I don't want Dillion to see us together.

What should I do? He looks nice, I can't bring myself to tell him the truth. And he is my first male friend.

I bit my lower lips in thought but decided to let it go.

I walked out to meet him then we both left for the dinning.

I walked slowly behind him fiddling with my cloth.

We got to the dinning and luckily. Just so luckily for me, neither Dillion, Dilly or Naomi was present, the only person sited there was Sam.

He's legs were placed on top of another dinning chair while he pressed his phone.

I sat down a bit far from both he and Luwis in relieve and after about 10 minutes I started hearing footsteps behind me.

I turned to see that guy again. Hold on, is he joining us for dinner?



But who the hell is he? Will he continue staying here even after tonight? I wondered and tried not to look at him.

Naomi dragged him to the other side and they both sat facing me. Not directly tho.

"So Andrew, what exactly will you like for dinner? I can tell the maids to start preparing it before my brothers show up" Naomi asked the guy.

"Umm...I'm okay with anything, I'm always okay with anything" the guy...wait...Andrew replied her.

"Come on" Naomi pouted like a baby and I heard Sam scoff.

I turned to look at him and found him glaring at them both. I don't really understand his eyes but I know he is displeased.

"It's okay, it's okay Naom" the guy insisted.

"No!!!" She shouted like a baby and tried standing up but stopped looking behind me.

My heart skipped as the thought that of who she was staring at hit at me.

Maybe I shouldn't have come down. I'm not really ready to face this guy again. My heart started pounding again.

I didn't turn to look at him, I fixed my eyes on the dining table.

"Where is Dillion?" I heard a different voice ask and I quickly raised my head up to see his twin brother.

Even tho it's hard differentiating between them but it's not entirely impossible. Their voices are different, the look in their eyes. They're different.

I think Dillion also walk different or maybe am mistaking.

"But he left before me, I wonder why he is not here" that Andrew guy answered.

"Well, where are the maids? Maybe he isn't ready" Dilly groaned.

"No...I think Shawna here should go call him, it'll be disrespectful eating without him" Naomi butted in and my heart skipped.

Where on Earth will I find him? Please hope am

hearing wrongly.

"Shawna??" I heard Naomi's voice again.

"What are you still waiting for? Go call him" she hushed.

At that moment I just wanted to squeeze her mouth shut. Why on Earth will she suggests that?

I didn't move.

I just became more restless.

"Sh..."

"Talk to her with some respect Naomi, she is clearly older than you. You aren't supposed to order her around, you're the youngest and he is your brother. Go call him" the Andrew guy interrupted her as she was about to say another thing.

Oh sweet lord!

Naomi gritted her teeth in anger and stood up but didn't move. Her eyes were fixed on me.

"What are you waiting for?" Dilly chipped in and she pulled her chair aside and made to leave but

stopped.

I heard foot steps behind me and figured out that he is really the one this time.

She sat down back and Dillion appeared and took a sit too.

I gulped hard as the waiting maids started dishing out the dinner.

"But... Shawna, I don't no you. Who are you?" I heard a gentle voice ask as we were about to eat.

I lifted my eyes to stare at him - Andrew. He was staring intensely at me.

"I..I..."

Gosh, what should I tell him?

He already knows my name I can't tell him my name again.

And I can't tell him, I'm Dillion s\*x slave. That is totally off point. I won't ever say that.

With everywhere dead silent and his gaze on me, it's made me want to pee.

My palms became sweaty, balls of sweats started forming on my forehead.

"I'm listening" he said again.

"Well, she won't tell you. She actually can't. I mean she can't bring herself to tell you because she's actually just a s\*x toy, my brother's property" Naomi butted in and I felt every blood in me dry up.

Oh goodness!

.

(School)

Shawna's POV

It felt so awkward. I felt like dying.

"A what??" The Andrew guy gasped out obviously surprised to hear that.

I fixed my eyes on my dinner.

I wish I can just stand up and leave this dinning. I just wish I can.

"Dilly is that true? Who's sex whatever? Yours?" I heard Andrew ask.

"Naomi go and eat in your room" I heard Dillion say.

I lifted my eyes a bit to stare at him.

"Did he say Naomi or did he call my own name?"

"What...what? Why?" I heard Naomi protest and I confirmed that he really mentioned her name.

"Now!" Dillion snapped and she stood up.

"As if what am saying isn't true" she mumbled as she stormed out obviously angrily.

"I'll also eat in my room" I heard Luwis suddenly say.

"Yeah, same here" Sam also said and they both left.

I just disappear Shawna, get up and also leave, I mentally encouraged myself.

I feel so so uncomfortable. I wish I can also leave but I know my place here and in order not to get Dillion annoyed I have to stay sited.

But in order to feel less uncomfortable I'll have to detach myself away from here.

I immediately drifted my mind elsewhere and started eating my meal slowly.

Few minutes later.

Back inside my room. I again recalled what happened at the dinner and tears started threatening to spill but I managed to hold myself.

Get a grip of yourself Shawna, don't let it break you, I consoled myself and finally fell asleep.

\*Next day\*

I flushed my eyes open as a loud knock came to my door.

"Yes..." I rubbed my eyes and got down from the bed. I opened the door and saw Luwis.

Okay, what is he doing here?

"We're leaving for Mexico in few hours. I just got the message, something came up" he announced surprising me.

"You can start preparing, we'll leave together without the boss" he continued.

"Without him?" Came out of my mouth. Like I'm kind of surprised.

"Yes, be fast" he cooed and I nodded and shut the door close.

Oh thank goodness!

I'll get to see ma'am Sandra again. She's the only one I feel very comfortable with.

Maybe because she's a woman and she's old enough to be my mother.

I rushed into the bathroom and quickly had my bathe.

Few hours later.

Sam, luwis and I got into a jeep.

Luwis said that we're gonna be using a plane to go back.

But why isn't Dillion coming along?

Well, that's a big relieve tho. It's great. At least I won't get to see his cold face for maybe three days.

Sam started the J eep, getting to the first gate, a car drove pass us. I looked inside the car and saw...

Hold on, isn't this Valentina? I thought and stared



keenly at the car.

No, there is no way she is the one.

But I kept staring at the car until I couldn't see it anymore.

I think I miss her too much, that's why am imagining things. But come to think about it.

Will she still like me? I don't no.

We got to the airport after about an hour then we boarded a plane. They already got our visa and everything ready. I don't no how it happened tho.

And after about 8 hours. We arrived.

I became really excited. Oh! I'm gonna be seeing ma'am Sandra again.

How sweet!

We came down from the plane and there was a car already waiting for us. We got in and the car took us to the mansion.

Will I still be able to see ma'am today? It's already late. Maybe she has slept off already, I thought but

was surprised to see her waiting at the front of the mansion.

I smiled as I hurriedly came down from the car.

"Oh child! Welcome" she cooed spreading her arms apart. I ran and embraced her.

"Oh ma'am, thanks for welcoming me, I really miss you. I don't want to ever get separated from you" I said as she patted my back.

"Same here dear and I have a very good news for you" she stated as she pulled me into the sitting room.

"What news?" I asked with my heart suddenly raising.

She stopped walking and then turned to face me.

"You finished high school right?" She asked and I nodded in confirmation.

"Okay, do you wanna continue? Do you wanna go to college?" She asked again and my eyes widened.

"Of course, of course ma'am, I will love too" I beamed.

"And that's the good news, you'll be starting school soon dear" she said and I gasped.

"Really?" I asked and she shook her head in confirmation.

"Oh my goodness!" I exclaimed and hugged her.

That's always been my number 2 dream. I can't believe this!

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 25

.

© Blessing

.

(So annoying)

Early that day in Mexico.

Valentina's POV

Andrew had asked me to come over to Mark's

quarters. Marks quarters is where Dillion, my ex boyfriend lives.

I won't lie, I became really excited. I've been looking for a chance to see Dillion again and I think this is the best opportunity.

Valentine said she was gonna follow me and I let her. I know she has a big crush on Dilly and won't ever hide it. I think it's something bigger than a crush tho, I aren't really sure.

I drove past a jeep on getting into the mansion, then I parked in the garage and came down. This isn't the first time coming here, but I felt really nervous. Extremely nervous.

"Hey Tina, hi there Tine" we heard a familiar voice and turned to see Andrew.

He was shirtless and was holding a plate.

I beamed smiles at him.

"Andrew!" Tine hollered obviously happy to see him. Then she ran and embraced him.

"Hey Tine, bet you missed me right?" He asked and I

laughed.

"Who wouldn't" I replied and he smirked.

"Yeah, I'm cute right. Well thanks, I get that a lot" his smirk grew wider and I laughed.

Always boasting, always talking about his looks.

"Come on in" he ushered us in.

"Um...is Dilly around?" Tine asked him.

"Nope, he left for the company few minutes ago" he answered her and she made a sad face.

"But...Dillion is in his room, wanna see him?" He turned to me and asked.

"Em..."I gulped as the nervous feeling in me returned. It had vanished when I heard his's voice.

"Of course Andrew, do you have to ask?" Tine butted in rolling her eyes.

"Okay just go to his room, you still remember his room right?" He asked and I nodded.

Then I moved my legs and started climbing the stairs suddenly recalling the last time I had seen

him, the day I ended the relationship.

Not that I don't love him, I do but his always so cold, introverted, and won't ever move on. His cold character irritates the hell out of me. Why can't he be like Andrew?

Andrew is lively. Always trying to make you laugh whenever you're with him. Dilly is also better, not too cold, far better than Dillion.

I had received a call from a bartender on that day, the bartender had called and told me to come get him. I had jumped into a cab and rushed to the bar. He was wasted and I know it's because he couldn't let go of his past.

I felt so irritated, if he'd gotten drunk because of happiness or something more better. I'd understood. He's always like that, always messed up with his past.

But the surprising thing was that I had actually asked him out myself and he accepted but I was still the one that ended things between us, not because I hated him but because of his coldness

but I no he always have a weird good side in him.  
He acts like a normal human once in a while.

I got to his door and knocked on it with my heart  
beating a bit faster than usual.

"Get in" I heard him say icily -As always.

I hesitated before pushing the door open, I got in  
and saw him standing in front of his window. He  
was also smoking - As usual.

"Hey" I tried making my voice sound firm and strong  
but it came out all cracked up.

He turned immediately and looked at me making my  
heart skip. I don't no why, maybe...just  
maybe...arrg...I don't no.

He didn't say anything for about 2 minutes, he kept  
staring at me.

"What are you doing here? Didn't expect to see you  
here?" He turned back and faced the window, then  
asked.

I felt a sting in my chest. He hasn't changed.

"Um..yeah,Andrew actually sent for me. Said to

meet up here" I said.

"Glad to see you" I added.

"Same here" he replied obviously...okay I don't no if he really meant it by replying same here. He should at least look at me. Why is he always a ghost.

His phone started ringing immediately and he inserted his hand into his trouser pocket and brought out his phone then placed it on his ear after picking up the call.

"To school, Yeah" the call was short and then he dropped the call.

"Glad to see you too but I've gat to go" he brushed past me and made for the door annoying the hell out of me.

"Is this a way to treat someone, Dillion? Can't you at least pretend to really miss me? Can't you just do that?" I shrieked and felt like biting his head off.

So annoying. Why did god create him this way? Why is he so handsome? If he wasn't handsome, I'm sure I would have gotten him completely out of my



head.

TBCSold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 25

.

© Blessing

.

(So annoying)

Early that day in Mexico.

Valentina's POV

Andrew had asked me to come over to Mark's quarters. Marks quarters is where Dillion, my ex boyfriend lives.

I won't lie, I became really excited. I've been looking for a chance to see Dillion again and I think this is the best opportunity.

Valentine said she was gonna follow me and I let her. I know she has a big crush on Dilly and won't

ever hide it. I think it's something bigger than a crush tho, I aren't really sure.

I drove past a jeep on getting into the mansion, then I parked in the garage and came down. This isn't the first time coming here, but I felt really nervous.

Extremely nervous.

"Hey Tina, hi there Tine" we heard a familiar voice and turned to see Andrew.

He was shirtless and was holding a plate.

I beamed smiles at him.

"Andrew!" Tine hollered obviously happy to see him. Then she ran and embraced him.

"Hey Tine, bet you missed me right?" He asked and I laughed.

"Who wouldn't" I replied and he smirked.

"Yeah, I'm cute right. Well thanks, I get that a lot" his smirk grew wider and I laughed.

Always boasting, always talking about his looks.

"Come on in" he ushered us in.

"Um...is Dilly around?" Tine asked him.

"Nope, he left for the company few minutes ago" he answered her and she made a sad face.

"But...Dillion is in his room, wanna see him?" He turned to me and asked.

"Em..."I gulped as the nervous feeling in me returned. It had vanished when I heard his's voice.

"Of course Andrew, do you have to ask?" Tine butted in rolling her eyes.

"Okay just go to his room, you still remember his room right?" He asked and I nodded.

Then I moved my legs and started climbing the stairs suddenly recalling the last time I had seen him,the day I ended the relationship.

Not that I don't love him, I do but his always so cold, introverted, and won't ever move on. His cold character irritates the hell out of me. Why can't he be like Andrew?

Andrew is lively. Always trying to make you laugh whenever you're with him. Dilly is also better, not

too cold, far better than Dillion.

I had received a call from a bartender on that day, the bartender had called and told me to come get him. I had jumped into a cab and rushed to the bar. He was wasted and I know it's because he couldn't let go of his past.

I felt so irritated, if he'd gotten drunk because of happiness or something more better. I'd understood. He's always like that, always messed up with his past.

But the surprising thing was that I had actually asked him out myself and he accepted but I was still the one that ended things between us, not because I hated him but because of his coldness but I no he always have a weird good side in him. He acts like a normal human once in a while.

I got to his door and knocked on it with my heart beating a bit faster than usual.

"Get in" I heard him say icily -As always.

I hesitated before pushing the door open, I got in and saw him standing in front of his window. He

was also smoking - As usual.

"Hey" I tried making my voice sound firm and strong but it came out all cracked up.

He turned immediately and looked at me making my heart skip. I don't no why, maybe...just maybe...arg...I don't no.

He didn't say anything for about 2 minutes, he kept staring at me.

"What are you doing here? Didn't expect to see you here?" He turned back and faced the window, then asked.

I felt a sting in my chest. He hasn't changed.

"Um..yeah,Andrew actually sent for me. Said to meet up here" I said.

"Glad to see you" I added.

"Same here" he replied obviously...okay I don't no if he really meant it by replying same here. He should at least look at me. Why is he always a ghost.

His phone started ringing immediately and he inserted his hand into his trouser pocket and

brought out his phone then placed it on his ear after picking up the call.

"To school, Yeah" the call was short and then he dropped the call.

"Glad to see you too but I've gat to go" he brushed past me and made for the door annoying the hell out of me.

"Is this a way to treat someone, Dillion? Can't you at least pretend to really miss me? Can't you just do that?" I shrieked and felt like biting his head off.

So annoying. Why did god create him this way? Why is he so handsome? If he wasn't handsome, I'm sure I would have gotten him completely out of my head.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 26-28

.

© Blessing

.

(A new Shawna)

Shawna's POV

I woke up with a smile on my face. I'm gonna start college probably tomorrow.

So excited, so so excited.

I came down from the bed and ran to the bathroom to wee and wash my face. After doing that I left in search of ma'am Sandra.

On the way I bombed into Beatrice.

Remember Beatrice, one of the maids. A really nice girl and she is my second favorite person here after ma'am Sandra. She doesn't behave sassy like most of them could always glare at me.

"Hey Shawna, I was on my way to see you, sorry I didn't wait up for you last night, I slept off" she apologized.

"It's okay Beatrice, ma'am explained things to me

already" I replied.

"Okay, so how is Mexico?" She asked and I smiled.

I don't know why I smiled, maybe because I'm too excited about schooling, I think that's just it. Could there be other reasons?

"Good great, is ma'am up?" I inquired as we started walking down side by side.

Fast forward....

Two days later....

I opened my eyes and jumped out of bed.

Today is the day, today I finally start school.

I have been preparing for it for this past two days.

Dillion isn't yet back. Luwis visited me yesterday.

I don't know how to push him away so I just let him to stay till he was tired of staying.

I ran into the bathroom afterwards, had a three minutes bathe, brushed my teeth and ran out back.

The clothes I'm supposed to wear to school today



got selected yesterday by Beatrice.

I can't really believe this. Seriously me going to school, I lost all hopes honestly. I wonder is Dillion approved this, does he know of this? Is he responsible?

I don't no but I'm still very excited.

After putting on the dress, I carried the small and very fancy handbag with a few books in it and stood in front of the mirror to stare at myself.

Oh Shawna!

A knock came at the door and before I could answer the door opened revealing Beatrice.

"Morning, I came to check up on you just in case you're still turning around on the bed" she said and smiled.

"Of course not, I'm all ready" I spread my arms apart and turned to face her.

"Ummm....nope, you aren't. At your age Shawna, you are supposed to make guys trip seriously for you. I know you're really beautiful but you need a

little bit of makeup" she said and walked over to the makeup table.

She pushed me down on the chair and grabbed the makeup kits.

"Stay calm" she mouthed and started designing my face. Lol.

Few minutes later.

I stood at the garage with Sam, ma'am Sandra and Beatrice ready to leave.

Ma'am Sandra personally asked Sam to be my driver for today and he agreed.

I didn't even eat breakfast. Like I don't even have an appetite, I just wanna get to school, that's the only important thing right now.

"Ok Shawna, all the papers you need are right inside your bag" ma'am Sandra said and I nodded.

"Since you refused to eat your breakfast, take and at least eat lunch" she said handing a few dollar notes to me.

"No...I'm okay, I'm seriously not hungry..."

"For now" she interrupted and squeezed the money into my hand.

"Thanks ma'am" I cooed, happy.

"Yeah go on" she urged and I got into the back of the already opened car and sat down.

"Bye Beatrice" I waved.

"Bye, make sure you study hard" she smiled and started.

Sam started the car and drove out.

After 30 minutes we arrived.

"Okay this is it, I'll be back here, 3:15pm to pick you up, make sure you wait for me right here" Sam announced as I got down from the car .

My eyes running round the big college.

Come on, like the hell! Won't I get lost here?

It's too big.

I thought as I stood at a point.

Unknown' POV

Yeah just sighted her, the spy is right, I said into the phone.

Since it's her first day, approach and take her to the registry office. From there become close to her, you no that's the plan, a reply came.

"Yes yes, understood."

.

.

(Mark?)

Shawna's POV

After standing there for a long time, I lifted my legs to go in search of the registry office but oh gosh, I noticed students staring at me. A lot of students especially the males, making it really uncomfortable for me.

Why on Earth are they staring at me like that, huh? Is something on my face? I wondered.

Okay, now that they are staring at me which one of them should I question?

"Hi" I heard a soft voice say behind me and I turned to see a guy. His fingers tucked into his trouser pocket. His low cut hair dyed, he's in all black outfit. Okay, I don't understand why am describing a total stranger?

"Hi" I cringed a bit and held my small shoulder hand bag properly.

"Um...I can see that you're new here, I also registered yesterday. Lemme show you to the registry office because it's hard finding the office even with directions" he cooed.

"Um..really? That will be nice" I struggled and said. It's kind of weird speaking to a total stranger. I'm not common with it at all.

"Okay let's go....but forgive my manners, I should have introduced myself first. My name is matthias" he introduced and extended his hand for a handshake.

I stared at his extended hand and then his face. I don't feel comfortable doing this but I won't act

rudely to him and he also wants to help right? That's all.

I extended my hand towards his and shook his hand.

"I'm Shawna" I also introduced and he smiled.

"Nice name, let's go" he urged and I nodded and followed after him as he walked a bit ahead of me.

I kept staring at the students. The dress most of them are putting on, oh gosh!

Are they bit\*ches?? I thought.

Oh Shawna please take a look at yourself too, my inner mind told me.

We continued walking with me following him from behind until he stopped in front of an office.

"This is it, I'll wait for you, go on" he pointed.

"Okay thanks" I thanked with a smug smile.

But did he just say, I'll wait for you here?

I stopped and stared at him and just as if he read my mind he said " I'll also show you to your class, help you get a locker and then show you around."

Wow that's great. Seems I'm welcomed here.  
Someone already treating me specially at my first  
day? That's awesome!

I smiled again and finally knocked at what seems  
like a metal or glass door, can't really tell?

"Come on in" a thick voice answered me.

I gulped and then opened the door then got in.

"Good morning sir" I immediately greeted.

The man who's eyes are on his laptop looked up at  
me.

"Morning sit down and present your details" he said  
and I sat down and opened my bag then brought  
out the file given by ma'am Sandra last night.

I extended the papers towards him and he collected  
them..

"So, your name is Shawna right?" He asked as if he  
wasn't seeing it there.

"Yes sir" I replied happy tho.

"Shawna mark,

" he added surprising me.

"Um...no sir, my surname isn't mark" I said, kind of confused.

"But it's written here that you are now bearing mark" he pointed at the paper and said.

Okay, what's really happening?

.

.

(Back!)

Shawna's POV

"Yes miss, aren't you the one bearing the name or..."

"Am the one sir, I am, I am.. Mark" I replied him and he sighed.

"Okay, sign these papers" he instructed pushing forward another set of papers to me.

I collected em, picked up a pen from my bag and started filling in the necessary details not forgetting that my surname is now mark.



Did ma'am Sandra change it? But who the hell is even Mark? Or can it be an error? Different thoughts kept flying into my head.

After a while, I finished up and handed the papers back to him.

"Alright Shawna mark, you have a long way to go seeing that you stopped schooling three years ago. You have a lot of catching up to do I'll advise you to concentrate more" he said and I nodded.

"Thank you sir, I will" I added.

"Ask someone to take you to the clerical staff office. You'll be collecting your key locker there. You are a special student, registration stopped a while ago but em you were allowed.

"Okay sir, thank you" I smiled standing up to leave.

"You can go" he dismissed and I opened the door and got out so much happy.

Finally a student!!

Immediately I got out, the first person on my eyes landed on was mathias.

I'd even forgotten about him.

"So you're now a student?" He asked and I nodded.

"Thanks " I added.

"For what?" He asked.

"Um....for bringing me here, I'm grateful for that, now can you please show me to the cler..."

"Yeah I know, this way" he pointed and started leaving. I followed him from behind excitedly. I couldn't hide my happiness.

I never imagined that I'd be able to go to school ever again especially the moment step father sold me to a s\*x house. This is purely miracle, I think mom and dad are both watching over me.

He took me far away from that particular building, we walked and walked before we got to my destination.

I knocked on the office door and went in after hearing a reply.

Minutes later.

We both walked down the hallway searching for my locker. The Matthias guy was still with me. He had offered to do all these earlier with me.

I noticed some students still stared at me, that is not my concern tho but is strange.

We successfully found my locker with a S15 on it. Mattias actually found it. He has shape eyes, I don't really know him but I think he is really nice to be helpful. A lot of people won't do all these.

"Thank you Mattias" I beamed smiles at him as I unlocked the locker with the key given to me. I opened it and found out it needs a clean up.

I guess I'll do that later, I thought and closed it back. Probably during lunch.

"Now finally to your class."

"What course are you studying?" He asked.

"Business management" I answered.

"Wow really?" He inquired and I nodded.

"Same with me, guess we're course mate then" he said and I chuckled then nodded.

"Let's go, I'll show you there, where is your time table?"

Few hours later. Classes are finally over. I sincerely enjoyed today.

I can't remember the last time I was this excited. Like I'm over excited.

Mattias had even sat down with me, he accompanied me throughout today. And now he is walking with me to the place sam had dropped me earlier today.

I told him not to worry but he is just assisting in everything. So some guys are actually this nice?

That's awesome.

We stopped at that point, he was even the one that pointed out the particular point to me. I was a bit confused because of the wideness and familiarity of the school but he had helped out. He is my saviour for today.

He stood again with me bringing up random topics until he sighted Sam coming, the manner in which

he left shocked me.

But I'm happy he did, I really don't want Dillion to know about it.

Sam stopped the car and I got into the back sit. After sitting, I lifted my eyes and saw Luwis siting beside Sam.

"Luwis!" I called surprised.

"Hey Shawna, who was that guy?" He asked.

"Um..what guy?" I asked pretendedly.

I can't believe he saw Mattias from a far distance.

"It's your first day Shawna, you are already having male friends" Sam chipped in with a light laugh making me embarrassed and ashamed.

"Well...he showed me around, that's all" I replied truthfully.

"Be careful tho, the boss came in just few hours ago" Sam chipped in again.

My eyes widened.

He's back?? I wanted to scream but held myself.

"Did you say he showed you around?" Luwis tried bringing back old topic.

"Well yeah, that's just it" I answered.

"That's not just it, make sure you don't talk to him again" I noticed he sounded a bit angry.

"You don't trust everyone you see" he added and Sam laughed hard.

"Look at his face" Sam pointed at luwis who in turn slapped his hand off.

"Don't ever point at my face you c\*nt suck\*r" Luwis growled but Sam only laughed harder.

I don't even understand the both of them.

But Dillion? He is back?

Oh gosh, hope I will no longer get into trouble with him. I will try. I will try!

He might make me stop schooling. No! I don't want to imagine the punishment so I better behave.

You have to really behave. Do everything he ask you to do. Make yourself stronger.

But won't Sam and Luwis tell him about Matthias? I pray not.

After an hour and some minutes later we arrived.

Sam parked in the parking lot and we all came down. I'd thought that I'll be able to run in and explain my day to ma'am Sandra but with the thought that Dillion is back, I won't try that. I might run into him and he might punish me.

I walked slowly into the sitting room, everywhere was dry. It's usually dry. I then walked up the stairs to my room.

I opened the door and got in, I made to close the door but couldn't because a force was restraining me. I looked out to see.....my hands fell off from the door handle immediately I saw him - Dillion.

"In 30 seconds" was all he said before leaving.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 29-30

•  
© Blessing

•  
(Why is he so close?)

Shawna's POV

I stared at him in fear as he vanished. I walked to the bed and dropped my bag anxiously wondering what he really wanted.

Should I take a bath first? Who knows...but he only gave me seconds.

No no, it's just a minute. I can't risk it, I thought and ran out of the room to his. I got to his and met the door slightly opened, I pushed the door aside and walked in fully to the room.

He was sitting on his bed and was doing something. I couldn't see what he was doing though because he was backing me.

I shut the door close and walked up to him. I stood without uttering a word. He should know that I'm here.



He didn't react to my presence for a long time and now I can see what he is doing. He is actually reading some documents with him.

I stood close to 5 minutes before he finally spoke up.

"Take that and get out" his voice came out hoarse.

I looked over at what he was referring to. It's a package in a box and the box is inside a small white nylon.

I gulped and walked up to the small package sitting on his dressing table, I picked the content up and turned to look at him.

I wonder what's inside, is it a good thing or a bad thing? Should I say anything?

Oh gosh! I'm so confused.

"What are you waiting for?" He raised his head up and stared at me curiously which made my heart beat faster.

"No... nothing" I replied and quickly left his room, on getting to mine I opened the small package at the

door.

I didn't bother reading all that's written on the package before getting the thing out. I was handling it with speed and something fell out of it. I took my eyes to look at the wrapped little thing and discovered it to be an ear piece.

My heart skipped a bit, I then decided to read the whole stuff written on the package and discussed it to be a phone.

The small package almost fell off my hand too.

What???? An iphone?

Christ! Could this be a mistake or am I probably dreaming? I thought as my eyes blinked repeatedly.

Without thinking much, I picked the earpiece up, turned and opened the door back and ran out, out to look for ma'am Sandra or even Beatrice.

This can't be real right? They have to help in confirming it.

I got to the other side and luckily saw ma'am Sandra and Beatrice walking out together.

Immediately I saw them, smiles formed on my face.

"Ma'am!" I called feeling high.

"What is it? Did something terrible happen?" Her eyes widened as she asked. Even Beatrice looked confused.

I shook my head negatively and presented the whole thing to them both.

Beatrice collected it and opened it properly then opened another side of it placed in a...slimmer package.

"It's a phone Shawna, who gave this to you?" Beatrice asked her eyes dilating.

"I wanted to confirm if it's real, I thought I was imagining things" I chuckled and said.

"How did this get into your hand Shawna?" Ma'am Sandra asked curiously.

I breathed heavily before responding.

"It's sir Dillion, he gave this to me just now" I answered.

"Wow! Really?" Beatrice exclaimed looking surprised but ma'am Sandra just nodded.

"Just handle it carefully Shawna, it's yours now and by the way. How was school today?" She inquired and my tummy rumbled.

It's rumbled in hunger and probably happiness cause right now I can't really explain how I feel.

"It was great...."

I need to do something, I stopped as I was about to narrate a lot of things to them. I snatched the phone from Beatrice then turned back and ran to the main building. I needed to thank him.

This is actually unbelievable!

I ran to his room breathlessly and when I got there, I stood wondering if I should just push the door open and enter but I decided to knock instead.

I knocked on the bed and a response followed immediately.

"Get lost" was what I heard and my heart fell.

Does he know that am the one? I only want to thank

him and nothing more, I thought sadly and turned back and left for my room.

On getting to my room I started jumping.

Oh mom! I can't believe this!

This really happened to your daughter. She finally got a phone, she got to touch a phone. She got to own one.

Mathias's POV

"How did it go today?" The boss asked.

"It went well, perfectly well. She's clueless. She doesn't suspect a thing" I answered.

"Really? How sure are you? She might just be playing along, that little brat companion are really smart. They have nose everywhere."

"I'm sure boss, 100 percent. She's a newbie and does not know how things run" I insisted.

"Okay then, make sure you make her trust you real well. She'll be very useful to us. Very very useful, if possibly make her fall in love with you so everything will be much easier."

"Understood, I'll do as you say. Won't leave her sight even for the slightest minutes" I ensured and he nodded.

"Yeah, I trust you Matthias. You have my blood in you and I believe you can take on that twin in whatever plan he has laid all these years. Be guided - Always."

Shawna's POV

My heart has been filled with happiness. All these are happening just like that?

It's like a Miracle but I'm grateful.

I have a phone, the next thing to do is to learn how to use it.

A knock came at the door and I quickly stood up and went to open it.

"Luwis?" I called, happiness couldn't be hidden in my voice.

"Hey Shawna, you look happy. What's up?" He asked as he walked in uninvited but I didn't mind as I shut the door.

He went straight to my bed and to the phone on it.

"You got a new phone?" He asked with his brows perked up.

I smiled as I got closer to him.

"He gave it to me, maybe as a gift" I replied.

"He? Who is the he? That guy at school?" He asked already annoyed.

"No, it's the boss, he gave it to me" I corrected him.

"Oh!" Was all he said before putting down the phone.

"Can you operate? This is the newest model. Can you?" He asked and I shook my head negatively.

"I don't even no how to turn it on" I replied sadly and he chuckled.

"You're what? A kid?" He teased as he grabbed the phone and did whatever before turning it on.

I beamed seeing that the phone was coming to live.

My phone! My first phone ever!

"Oh! I can see that everything is already put in

place" he mumbled as he operated it.

My eyes remained fixed curiously on the phone as he operated it.

"Here's my number, you can call me anytime you want. Even in the middle of the night, I'm always available for ya!" He said making me chuckle.

What's he saying? Even in the middle of the night?

"But you know what?" He asked and I replied with a "no".

"Maybe you should gift the phone to me, I'll get you a new one" he suggested having a serious face on.

I frowned immediately and shook my head.

"No! No! I won't" I answered firmly and tried grabbing the phone from him but he raised it up.

I stood up on my feet and kept on trying to get hold of the phone but he kept moving his hand in different direction.

I hit his leg in the process and almost fell but he caught me and turned me, making me lie on the bed with him facing me.



Seeing the closeness between us my eyes widened.  
Why is he so close?

I was about to get up but stopped moving  
immediately I heard the door flung open.

.

(Sold out)

Shawna's POV

My heart beat rapidly increased as the person that  
pushed the door open walked in and then stopped  
on seeing Luwis and I in that position.

I gulped and sat up then shifted away from Luwis  
who also sat properly on the bed.

"Shawna, what's going on here?" Ma'am Sandra  
who just walked in asked.

She has a surprise look on.

"Um...he...I.." I stammered thinking of what to reply  
but couldn't find any.

"I was teaching her how to use her new phone, I'll  
get going" Luwis was the one that answered after a

long silence.

I watched him as he got up and left afterwards shutting the door behind him.

I felt weird. It felt weird that ma'am Sandra had to find me in that particular position with him.

I fiddled with my fingers, my eyes fixed on the floor. I know it's wrong. I feel guilty. What if Dillion finds out?

Oh I'll be so dead if he finds out but I know ma'am Sandra won't sell me out.

"You called him to come teach you how to operate your new phone?" Ma'am Sandra suddenly spoke up walking to sit on chair close by.

"Yes...no actually, he just visited and knew about the phone" I answered turning to look at her.

"Don't try it again, don't try to get so close with him. You don't know him, even if you do know him as long as you're here and you're Dillion's....." she sighed and continued.

"My point here is, maintain some distance with him.

It won't be so good once Dillion finds out that you two were actually that close."

"Lemme tell you one thing. Dillion actually hates sharing. That's why he has never been to a hotel just to play with some random slut for the night. He will never do that, he is reserved so he hates it. Have that in mind" she concluded.

"Anyways explain how today's classes actually went" she said after a pause.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*Next day\*\*

I walked into the college gate. So wild.

Luwis had actually brought me to school today. Ma'am Sandra said I'll be assigned to my personal driver soon but not now so she had personally asked Luwis to bring me to school and I in turn told him to drop me off at the school gate.

I wanna walk in myself, I wanna take a good look around by myself.

He dropped me off like I told him and I started

proceeding inside, looking from left to right feeling so excited.

I haven't walked for long before a familiar figure showed up.

"Matthias" I called stopping dead on my track. He stood facing me.

"Hey, how're you?" He asked.

"I'm good. You're early?" I asked.

"Yes, I'm always early. Who was that that brought you to school? Your boyfriend or your driver?" He answered and asked as we both proceeded ahead.

"Nope, he's a friend. You can call him a friend" I replied.

"Wow! He must be a good one to bring you to school everyday. You must be lucky" he cooed.

"Um...yeah" I shrugged not wanting to reveal any more thing to him.

"So, you must be rich, huh?" He said.

"Huh!"

"Yeah, look at your dressing. A poor person won't wear this. Even your dressing yesterday looked expensive too" he went on and I kept looking at him confusingly.

I mean why this conversation?

"I'm sorry to ask but who exactly is your father? I'm not trying to interrogate but um..I think I like you so in order to let my feelings...."he stopped talking when I stopped walking.

"I'm going too far aren't I? But I seriously like you, so I want to know if I'm good enough for you, that's it" he said lowly his gaze on the floor looking so pitiful.

"Um... Matthias, I'm really sorry to ask but how come you suddenly like me? We just met yesterday, didn't we?" I questioned.

"Yes, but I couldn't stop thinking about you. Your accent, your aura. The way you stare, your pretty face couldn't disappear from my head. To tell you the truth, you are the reason I came early" he explained surprising me.

"Re..really? You like me that much?" I asked and he

nodded.

"Do you have a boyfriend?" He went on and asked.

I raised my hand to the hair covering my eyes and pushed it behind.

How come I don't feel good about him liking me and all. I really don't want this but what the hell should I tell him?

"Yes, I do...um..I do" I stuttered and his gaze fell.

"Is he the one that drove you?" He asked again sadness laced in his voice making me feel kind of bad.

"Um... nope" I replied and he nodded.

"Okay, I get it. But we can be friends right?" He said extending his hands.

"Official friends or close friends" he added.

"Uh..yeah" I shook his hand and he smiled.

"Now let's get to class" he cooed and I agreed and followed him.

Should I fast forward??? Of course.....

Fast forward!!!

Two weeks later.

Luwis's POV

"Sam" I called as we both walked into the garage.

"Yes" he answered.

"I've been having suspicions" I said.

"Huh! About what?"

"About Shawna's friend in school. I dropped her off in school yesterday and saw him. I came down from the car and decided to follow him."

"Really? Guy you're just jealous. From the very start, you have been jealous but don't forget she's the boss's girl" he chuckled and said.

"No listen, he looks familiar Sam. I have seen him somewhere. I have seen the bastard somewhere before but can't remember when, where and the reason we met" I said scratching my head.

"Then try to remember" he poked me and said then continued walking.

"I'll tell the boss about it" I said and he stopped walking then faced me.

"You want to put her in trouble don't you?" He asked his eyes opened.

"It's actually good if he get's angry at her. That will be to my advantage" I replied him and he pulled a puzzled look on.

"Meaning?" He asked.

"Meaning you'll never understand" I winked at him then turned to go talk to him.

He is definitely someone not good. If not he won't look familiar at all, I thought and hastened my steps and soon I was standing in front of his office.

I knocked on it but didn't get a reply. I kept hearing his voice without hearing a second voice. He might be speaking into his phone.

The door opened and he showed up and I am right. He is talking into a phone.

He left the door opened and walked back to his sit while I closed it and walked up to him.



He rounded up with the call and gave me an expectant eyes.

"What is it luwis?" He asked.

"There is something suspicious, I mean someone suspicious. I see him around...around Shawna, at school. She said he's a friend and they are really really close" I narrated and he's brows perked up to stare at me more seriously. A frown also appeared on his face.

I like it tho.

"Who is he?" He hushed.

"I don't kn...."

"Then find out" he interrupted seemingly more angry.

"I'll do that" I replied and started leaving with a smile on my face.

Don't hate on me when you find out I sold you out Shawna. I'm doing this for us both.

TBC

Okay what do you think luwis is actually doing?

He wants Dillion to actually get mad at Shawna.

There is something going on....

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 31-32

.

© Blessing

.

(I don't wanna die)

Luwis's POV

"Hey, you told him?"

"Seriously?" Sam asked as I got out to meet him still at the garage.

"Yeah, isn't it time yet? Lemme go get Shawna. I wanna use the opportunity to get that bastard" I said and collected a bunch of car keys from him.

I unlocked a car nearby and got in. Then drove out

in full speed.

I got to the front gate and stopped. It's high time she comes out with the bastard. It's high time.

I leaned on the car with my eyes focused in the direction she follows. It didn't take up to fifteen minutes, she showed up with him. Immediately the bastard sighted me, he hurriedly gave Shawna whatever and started leaving which motivated me a lot.

He acts weird. The bastard definitely knows me.

I walked up to Shawna hurriedly, handed the keys to her.

"Wait for me in the car" I said and without waiting for a reply ran after the bastard.

He noticed that I was following him and he started running and as expected I ran after him.

Damn! I don't know my way around here or I'd rounded him off.

I continued running after him, he ran into the school hallway making students move away in fear. I

followed him and he entered into the male toilet.

He was about sliding down but held himself from falling, something fell off his pocket during the process.

I bent to pick it up and it was his wallet, I looked up and didn't find him again.

"F\*\*k\*ng bastard!" I cursed and yanked the wallet open. I emptied all the content and brought out his ID. His wallet contained about three cards in it. I took the three cards and left his emptied wallet on the floor and then left to meet up with Shawna.

Shawna's POV

I'm surprised, really really. Why did luwis leave like that?

Who was he after? I thought staring at the direction he had followed.

After about twenty minutes of waiting for him, he finally showed up looking a bit pissed.

"Luwis, what happened?" I asked immediately.

He buried the facial look and brought out a new one.

"Um..I thought I saw someone I knew, I followed after em and discovered that he wasn't the one. I was mistaken, sorry for keeping you waiting here and why didn't you get into the car?" He explained and asked, collecting the car keys from me.

"Um....I don't really no how to use it" I replied also getting into the car.

I find he's story untrue tho.

He ignited the engine of the car after getting in and soon we were on our way.

"Umm.. Shawna, can I ask you a question?" He turned slightly and stared at me because I was sitting behind him.

"Okay, go on" I answered.

"That guy, your friend. What is he like? I just wanna know, it's okay if you don't tell me" he said and I shrugged.

"He's cool" I replied simply.

"Don't you know anything else about him? Like he's background?\*" He asked again.

"Well...um...I think he's from a poor family,he is trying to be perfect, to get his family out of poverty. That's all I know about him" I answered truthfully.

"Okaaayyy...just that? Ok cool!"

"Yeah" I shrugged again.

"Don't you like him?" I inquired.

"No...no, I want you to continue being friends with him. Become more close with him" he replied which baffled me.

"Really? I should become close to him. Why is that? You always told me not to allow any guy get close to me especially him" I said.

"That's because guys are dangerous and I didn't know he was from a poor background. The dude is clearly harmless so get closer to him" he cooed and I nodded having a little doubt on. I can't fathom it but there is something.

The conversation died down after a little while and boom we're home.

About the past weeks anyway. I've been occupied

with school and my new phone. Dillion doesn't call or ask for me, everything is going smoothly.

Matthias? About Matthias, he is my only friend for now.

He has agreed to let go of whatever feelings he have and become normal friends with me. He is a cool guy if you ask me but he acts weird some times.

I don't know why tho but I ignore it. Just like Luwis said, he's poor, he's harmless.

I came down from the car and headed for the door but was met with a standing Dillion. He was blocking the door entrance wearing an angry face on.

It made my heart beat become faster, it has never happened before.

"Luwis, give me the keys" he demanded as he stretched his hand forth to luwis who came to stand behind me.

Luwis handed the keys to him and he used it in

unlocking another car.

"Come here" he rasped without looking at me but I knew I was the one he was referring to. It's can't be luwis right.

I stared at Luwis who looked like he had no idea of the situation. I shouldered and followed him into the car.

He had ignited it. I sat down in the back side but he commanded me to sit at the front beside him, I obeyed and sat at the front sit beside him in fear. I don't know why he is suddenly acting like this, I'm crippling out.

I'm scared of this man. Especially with the face he has on right now.

He reversed the car and drove out of the big compound. Out of the first gate, second gate, and the last gate and into the road.

He drove normally for a while until he got to a certain cross section. He reversed the car and started off into a high way that doesn't have much cars running on it. That was when he started driving



at a crazy high-speed.

I got alarmed immediately. My heart beat increased again.

As if that wasn't enough he increased the speed again.

"Oh my God!!" I didn't know when I screamed out. I have been trying to control myself.

Shortly we got into a bridge still in full speed, the roof of the car opened and breeze speed itself into the car and blew everything up. My hair was all over the place.

I held onto the car tightly still trying hard to control my screaming.

He increased the speed of the car when we started going down the bridge and my heart skipped when I saw a car coming ahead of us. It was just like the car we were in, it was also coming with speed.

He didn't avert or turn the steering making me wonder if he is actually blind or something.

We got really close to the incoming car and I had to

turn to him.

I can't die this way.

"Sir...sir Dillion" I called almost touching his hand.

"There..there is a car...there is a car" I pointed forward but he didn't pay me any attention making my fears increase.

I turned to see the car right in front of us, it almost crashed but that was when he averted the car.

I sighed and placed my two hands on my fast beating chest, tears threatening to spill.

What is he doing again? Is this some kind of punishment or what?

It didn't take up to five minutes again, we saw a truck on the other lane.

Then suddenly Dillion turned and faced that lane which made me scared again.

The truck was moving in full speed, Dillion came face to face with it, with the speed of the truck it looked as if it has lost its breaks but what the hell is Dillion doing?

I started feeling the urge to puke. The speed is too much.

Dillion kept driving facing the now incoming truck.

"Sir Dillion please, we are gonna die if you don't cross to the other lane" The truck occupied the whole lane. He turned deaf ears to me and continued going.

"Oh gosh! Please!! We are really gonna die" I cried and touched his arm.

He turned to glare at me meaning I should get away from him but hell I couldn't.

"Please No!!!" I cried and held his arm more firmly.

"Are you crazy? Get your hands off me?" He yelled.

"No please, don't get us killed. I don't wanna die" I pleaded.

"Leave my f\*\*k\*ng hand alone!" He groaned and pulled away from me. He threw my hands aside and then I closed my eyes.

I think I'm finally gonna be seeing my parents again, I thought as the truck was now very close. There

was no way again.

I closed my eyes and awaited the crash.

.

.

(Two faced)

Shawna's POV

I tightened my eyes waiting for the time that I'm gonna die but nothing happened.

With my hands covering my both eyes, I wondered what was going on.

I instead heard the door open.

I uncovered my eyes to see that the truck stopped right in front of us and Dillion is already outside the car.

The urge to puke came again and I opened the other side and immediately released everything inside my mouth. I feel weak, scared, sick. I feel all the terrible things in the world.

The driver of the truck came down with a parcel.

"Boss" I heard him call.

"Sorry for coming late" the driver said confusing me.

Do they know each other or what?

He handed the parcel to Dillion who collected it and peeped into it.

"How are the others?" Dillion asked his eyes on the parcel.

"They are good boss but um...I have got a problem" the guy said.

"What is it?" Dillion asked looking up to him.

"The cops, they are on my tail and they'll be here anytime soon";the guy replied.

Oh my gosh! The cops? I thought.

"You know how to avert them, don't you?" Dillion asked him.

"Of course, I'm just worrying, since it's already with you. You might want to leave now. If they get me they can't get anything out of me now" he said.

"They can't get me either if that's what you're worrying about, go on. Be careful" Dillion said for the first time in a cool concerned tone.

"Yes sir" the guy replied and bowed a little before turning back to his truck.

He got in, started the truck, moved back and left.

It didn't take up to five minutes, we started hearing the cops siren.

Dillion turned to look at me, he probably hasn't noticed until now that I am outside. He's eyes went down to the stuff I vomited and he made an irritated face which got me embarrassed.

I wiped my mouth clean with my hand and wanted to open the door but he stopped me.

"Hey wait" he hushed and went to the booth. He brought out a table water and threw it to me.

I collected it in relief, I washed my mouth, my hands and even my face.

By the time I was done the cops already showed up. About three of the cops car stopped around us. Two

cops men came down from the car and came to us.

"Hey, did you see any truck around here?" One of them asked staring at Dillion.

Dillion wasn't looking at them, he was doing something or hiding the parcel inside the car.

"No" he answered bringing his head out of the car.

"Oh Mr Mark" the cop exclaimed and he's eyes diverted to me.

"I'm so sorry, I never knew you were the one" the cop apologized.

"Yeah, it's okay" Dillion replied with a smirk on. A very dirty one.

I think this guy is two faced.

"So, you didn't see any truck around here, huh?" The cop asked again.

"Of course" replied Dillion.

"Alright, we'll leave you now. Sorry for disturbing" the cop said the last part staring at me.

"Hey! Let's go" the cop waved at the others.

They got into the car and was about going before Dillion stopped them.

"You might want to check out this side, I think i saw a truck down there on my way. I aren't sure tho"  
Dillion pointed at a very different direction.

Goodness! This guy. He is something else.

"Yeah thanks Mr Mark, we appreciate" the cops thanked him and followed his direction.

I heard Dillion sigh immediately and he got into the car, I didn't need him to tell me before I opened the other side and got in.

Immediately he started and drove off.

\*

When he finally arrived I couldn't bear it anymore.

My chest pains has started again. He drove crazily roughly on our way back. Almost collided with three different cars.

How am I sure he is not doing this to really scare me? It won't kill him to drive normally.



He even got me now.

He came down from the car and left immediately leaving me leaning on the car. My hands placed on my hurting chest with my eyes tightly shut.

Oh christ! When will I stop feeling this pain? This terrible pain always caused by fear. It's becoming unbearable for me.

After resting for a short while, I decided to go in. The pain didn't leave me, it just hooked me around my chest region but I still managed.

I bombed into ma'am Sandra on the way who looked surprised seeing me in that state.

"What is it?" What is wrong with you Shawna? She asked concerned and fear visible in her voice.

"I'm...okay ma'am, I just need a cup of water" I replied.

"Okay sit here" she led me to the couch and made me sit while she ran around and got me a cup of water.

She gave it to me and I sipped from it.

"Shawna, are you sure you are okay?" She asked trying to remove my hand from my chest.

"No...it's okay" I muttered.

"No you're not okay, you look like a ghost, who's blood got drained" she said which made me chuckle.

A ghost who's blood got drained? What does that mean?

I started feeling dizzy.

"Shawna!!" The call was distant.

"Are you really okay?"

"You're passing out! Your temperature is raising!" I kept hearing ma'am Sandra distant voice until I couldn't see or hear a thing again.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 33-34

.

© Blessing

.

(If you want her to die)

Writer's POV

Shawna was immediately rushed to the hospital by ma'am Sandra and Beatrice around the time she fainted. Sam who was also around was the one that drove them to the hospital.

Ma'am Sandra didn't know what to think as the doctors attended to Shawna.

What is really wrong with her? She's not pregnant, I'm sure of that so what could be wrong? She thought as she sat at the hospital sit outside the hospital ward. Beatrice was with her.

After about 40 minutes later, the head doctor came out of the emergency room Shawna was rushed into.

Ma'am Sandra knows him very well, he is actually Dillion's personal doctor.

"Matthew, what is wrong with her?" Ma'am Sandra quickly asked standing up on her two feet with Beatrice supporting her.

"Um...Ma'am is she your daughter? Cause I'm confused. I have never seen her before" Matthew asked instead.

"No she is not, but she is very important. So tell me what is wrong with her?" Ma'am Sandra went ahead to ask again.

"Well she had an anxiety attack, it's also called panic attack. It's due to intense fear and emotional distress" Matthew explained.

"Oh good lord!" Ma'am Sandra exclaimed.

"How is she now?" She went ahead and asked.

"Well, I'll advise an immediate surgery for her ma'am. It has gotten worse and it needs to be stopped. Pleuritis can be cured with drugs but hers.... Surgery will be better. She has a brighter future ahead" Matthew rounded up.

Ma'am Sandra sighed.

"Okay, how much is the surgical bill?" She asked.

"Well...it's quite much, no surgery is easy you know. I'll advise you tell Dillion about this since she's very important" Matthew said and she sighed again.

"Can we see her?" Beatrice suddenly asked.

"She's asleep for now. She needs all the rest she can get, she doesn't need to be disturbed" Matthew replied and Beatrice face turned sour. She wasn't happy at all, same as ma'am Sandra.

"I'll go now" Matthew added and left.

Immediately he got to his office, he received a call.....

Ma'am Sandra's POV

I wonder what made her that way. What caused her fear?

Hold on, Dillion just came back with her right. Did he perhaps do anything to her? I thought deeply but couldn't land anywhere.

"Beatrice" I called.

"Yes ma'am" Beatrice replied.

"Where is Samuel? I want him to take me back to the mansion. I need to see Dillion" I said.

"Okay, I'll go get him now" she replied then went out of the hospital and came back few minutes later with him.

"I need you to take me to the mansion immediately" I requested.

"Yes of course, this way" Samuel led the way out of the hospital. We got into the car he drove us with and in minutes we were on the road.

After about 40 minutes later we arrived the mansion.

I went up to Dillion's personal office but couldn't find him.

Where did he go to? I thought and went to his room.

I knocked on it but got no reply, the door wasn't properly closed so I decided to open it and enter.

I got in to see him coming out of the shower with a towel wrapped around his neck.

"Child, I've been knocking on your door. Didn't know you were bathing" I said walking to the single couch there to sit on.

"Yes, as you can see" he answered.

"So, do you hear what happened earlier?" I asked.

"No, what happened?" He asked going through his closet.

"Shawna. She fainted" I said but he didn't look surprise or react to it.

"You already knew about it?" I asked.

"Yes" he answered.

"But why did you reply with a no?" I questioned.

"Because I wanted to hear it from you" he answered and a few minutes of silence stepped in.

"Aren't you gonna ask me how she is?" I inquired.

"How she is is non of my business" he blurted shocking me a little.

I sighed and rubbed my forehead.

"Anyways, I came here to tell you how she is so lemme not prolong things. She needs surgery and the money required is much accordingly to Matthew. She needs it fast and you're the only one that can provide such amount of money" I explained.

"I don't have money ma'am, so give up" he said.

I ignored what he said and stood up.

"You should talk to Matthew, if you want her to die, tell him so he can kill her. Stop making the innocent girl suffer Dillion."

"Innocent?" he chuckled inaudibly.

"I'll get going now Dillion" I added and left.

Goodness! Why is this boy like this? Why can't he act normal for once?

If not that Matthew had earlier came back to inform me that Dillion already called him, and he has already explained things to him, and he already cleared up the bills I could have been dying of worry ness. If he already cleared things up why is he acting heartless? I thought and shook my head



again before leaving.

.

(You liar)

Writer's POV

Back at the hospital.

The surgery on Shawna got carried out the next day and of course it went smoothly.

Now, she has been transferred to a patient ward for full recovery.

Luwis who heard the news of what happened to Shawna after Dillion took her out felt really guilty. He knows that if he hadn't told Dillion then she will not be in that condition.

Ma'am Sandra, Beatrice and one other maid by the name Vee sat around Shawna and watched her sleep. They anticipated the time that she will finally woke up. While Sam and Luwis stayed outside her ward.

Luwis couldn't wait for Shawna to wake up.

And lastly Dillion....while you'll find out later as you read on.

Shawna's POV

I felt myself coming back to live.

Aw..what the hell happened? I thought as everywhere looked dark, I realized that my eyes were closed and I slowly opened it.

The first place my eyes caught was the white ceiling up.

Then I heard low whispers, whispers of people calling my name.

"Shawna!" I could suddenly hear my name loud and clear.

My eyes drifted to the direction that the loud voice came from to see ma'am Sandra.

"Ma'am" I called even if it came out in a whisper. Then I made to sit up but felt a hand holding me down from the left hand side.

I shifted my eyes to see Beatrice, she prevented me from sitting up. She and one other maid there.

"Stay calm, you just had a surgery. Don't try to force yourself, you don't need it" ma'am Sandra said and I relaxed again.

"I'll go inform the doctor that you are awake"  
Beatrice said and left.

"Ma'am Sandra" I called again staring fully at her. I still couldn't get it. What the heck really happened?  
Why was a surgery performed on me?

"Yes child, how are you feeling? I hope you are feeling strong now?" She asked.

"Yes, but what happened?" I answered and asked.  
That is what I really wanted to know.

"A surgery was performed on you Shawna, that's what happened" she replied maybe purposely ignoring the fact that I want a full explanation of everything.

Why will a surgery be performed on me? I don't understand!

The door opened and Beatrice entered accompanied by the doctor and two other people

behind him.

The doctor came to me and started checking me.

"Are you okay, Shawna?" He suddenly asked.

How did he get to know my name? I wondered but answered his question still.

"I'm feeling okay" I answered.

"Okay good, a day or two more days here will do the trick. After that, you can go back to your normal activity" he smiled at the end.

"I'll get going now" he added.

"Thank you Matthew" ma'am Sandra thanked him as he left.

When he left I suddenly saw the two people behind him.

"Hey Shawna!" Sam called.

"You made us all worry, praise the Lord you are finally back" he said sounding happy.

"I never knew you know how to praise the, Lord Sam" ma'am Sandra teased and we laughed. I also

laughed.

"Aha! I have got to head home and make something delicious for you Shawna, you need a lot of healthy food so said the doctor" she quoted the last part.

"Vee you have got to accompany me, Beatrice you stay here. Sam let's go, you're our driver" Ma'am Sandra said standing up to leave.

"Alright take care Shawna" Vee waved and I smiled at her.

"Thank you" I thanked as she walked out with Sam.

"Take care of her till am back" ma'am Sandra said to Beatrice.

"Of course ma'am, lemme walk you out, I can use that opportunity to get her a drink" Beatrice suggested and they walked out together leaving the room. Now it's just Luwis and I who has surprisedly been quite.

I wonder what's up with him tho.

"Hey" he called his voice husky.

"Hey, are you okay?" I asked as he came to take a sit

close to me.

"Yeah. You are the one lying here, I should be asking you that" he hushed.

"I'm fine but you look off" I said truthfully.

"Yeah, that's because I did something I shouldn't have done" he cooed and my brows perked up.

"Really? What did you do that made you this way? I'm kind of surprised yunno" I chuckled.

"Yeah" he said again and held one of my hands.

"Hey, can you forgive me for something?" He asked caressing my right hand he held.

"Umm...what is it?" I asked now getting confused.

"Why do I have to forgive you Luwis? You didn't do anything wrong to me" I asked.

"Well I did, I sold you out and am sorry for that" he replied with his voice cracked up.

"Sold me out? As how?" I questioned glaring hard at him.

"To the boss, I was the one who made him get angry

at you. I told him about your relationship with Matthias, I told him you are really close to him. Now you ended up here" he explained.

"Wait, you told him about Matthias Luwis? He is just a friend to me. why did you tell him about it? After asking me to continue being friends with him? You went and told him?" I asked getting annoyed.

"No! No! I had already told him everything before I advised you to continue being friends with him, I mean...but am sorry okay."

"You are unbelievable Luwis, how could you? I knew you were only pretending, you liar" I snarled and pulled my hand away from his.

"Come on Shawna, it was for a reason too, although I also did it selfishly but..."he paused when he realized I wasn't paying attention to him again.

"I'll just get out" he said lowly and got out.

How could he? No wonder Dillion acted that way.

I knew he couldn't act that way without a reason. Luwis actually caused it.

## Dillion's POV

I drove at a low speed wondering why I was actually headed for the hospital.

In the next hour I got there but found it hard getting down from the car. After several hasitation I came down from the car and went straight to Matthew's office.

Luckily enough, he was alone. I went and sat down facing him.

"Who do we have here? Mr Mark, you're so welcome. We are so so honored to have a very honourable personality in our mist today I..."

"Can you stop with it? It gives me headache. I can't be falling sick in a hospital Matt" I groaned and he smiled.

"I'm surprised, what are you doing here? Today isn't your check up Dill. I'm just surprised to see you here" he leaned back on his sit and said still smiling.

While, the lady you operated on. How is she?" I inquired.



His brows joined together and he stared at me with a suspicious eyes for a while before leaning forward to look at me.

"Who is she to you?" He asked instead.

"Will you answer me Matt?" I groaned again.

"She's perfectly fine, so she is the one you are here for" he grinned.

"Yeah" I mumbled and stood up. He also stood up.

"That's it? You are leaving?" He frowned and asked.

"Yes, hope you didn't reveal that I am the one who made the payment....."

"Oh about that? You didn't tell me you wanted it to be secret. I already told ma'am Sandra, I told her after you called and made the payments" he replied at once.

"Are you crazy Matt?" I shrieked and he blinked.

"I didn't know you wanted it to be kept a secret Dill" his eyes widened and he started moving back.

"Come here" I beckoned on him to come closer but

he kept moving back.

"I'm really gonna kill you."

TBC

What is really going on on Dillion's head?

Luwis, you think he deserved the reaction he got from Shawna?

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 35

.

© Blessing

.

(F\*\*k\*ng dubious)

Hours later.

Luwis's POV

"What is it Luwis? You're moody" Sam asked.

"Nothing, I'm cool" I replied him.

"You're not. You aren't always like this. Lemme guess, it's Shawna right? Did something happen between you two?" He went on and asked again.

I shrugged and then narrated what had happened between the both of us to him.

"Well, I warned you not to let the boss know but you did anyways. Didn't you want this to happen? You said you'll like it if he gets mad at her right? Then why are you like this now?" he scoffed and asked.

"You're crazy, I never wanted her to end up here or even get mad at me. I didn't know this was gonna happen...I mean I didn't expect her to be here but guess I should have listened to you" I muttered.

He sighed and placed his hand on my shoulder.

"You're a brother luwis, get your eyes of Shawna now. Before it's too late, you know you can never have her, it isn't possible" he said but it angered me.

"That's a lie, don't utter shit again. You know nothing okay?" I snarled and he flinched. I guess he

didn't expect that reaction from me.

I stood up on my feet and made to leave.

"Come on, are you mad at me? I'm sorry" he apologized as I left him there. Was still in the hospital. Now I'm headed outside to go smoke.

Can't get hold of myself anymore.

As I strolled through the hallway, a familiar face walked pass me in a dark hoodie.

I turned and looked at the person.

He looks familiar, I thought and made to continue going on my way but suddenly recalled him.

That Matthias guy. "Shit!" I cussed as I followed him but the nigga is pretty smart.

He sensed me out real fast and increased his walking pace.

This is a hospital, we can't run in it else I would have ran to him and dealt with him but I just walked after him.

He took a turn that led to a different pathway, I

followed after him and when he finally got outside. He started running, I didn't waste time I followed him up.

He ran into the streets and I followed after him.

Everything about him, the way he suspects and senses out things fast. He is a good bastard, he is probably born into this game. Well, I wasn't born into it but I grew up in it so I took a quick turn and jumped out from the front surprising him.

He halted and started taking quick steps back.

"Bastard, do you miss me?" I breathed in and out sharply because of the distance I had to run.

He continued moving backward, the hoodie covering almost all part of his face.

I got to him as he was about to run off and pulled him down to the ground and then punched him.

Then pulled the hoodie away from his face and gasped.

"Damn!" He is not the one. This is just a kid.

I looked up to see him 'the bastard'. He was staring

at me from a mile, a smirk on his face.

I know what he did, he managed to trick me by switching dress with his boy here.

"F\*\*k!" I cussed again as I got up from the boy who was already bleeding.

He is smart! F\*\*k\*ng dubious.

Shawna's POV

I stayed with Beatrice for long. She told me a lot of things that was funny and I laughed.

Together we learned how to use the phone Dillion got for me. I still haven't learnt how to use it although I'm trying.

We continued scrolling through the phone, but my mind told me to stare up.

I lifted my eyes up and I could swear that I saw Dillion.

But he is no longer there, I crumbled my face in confusion.

I just saw him now or was I hallucinating?

"Are you okay? Why is your face like that?" Beatrice asked, concerned.

"The young master, I saw him. He was standing right outside my ward few minutes ago" I said pointing at the door.

She stared at me in doubt.

"Lemme confirm" she breathed out and stood up.

She opened the door then looked left and right before coming in back.

"I didn't see anyone that looked like him" she said.

"Oh!" I mouthed, my chest fell.

Was I expecting him to care? Was I expecting him to even pay me a visit? That's probably impossible. He's too cold!

He won't try it.

"Okay, let's try looking at this one. What is its name? Instagram?" Beatrice said bringing me out of my thought.

"Um...yeah" I muttered taking my attention back to

the phone.

**\*\*Two days later.\*\***

I got discharged.

Ma'am Sandra had suggested I stayed back and have a proper rest but I couldn't hear of it. I have to attend school today, I don't like that I missed class. I have a lot of things to catch up on, missing class is like a poison to my studies.

And Dillion? I haven't set my eyes on him since I got discharged.

That's it. You are a nobody Shawna. Don't expecting the impossible, I thought as I prepared for today's school.

And in few minutes I was done.

I got to the garage and didn't want Luwis to take me. I'm still annoyed with him for betraying my trust in him.

A bodyguard there was asked to take me instead and he did.

Immediately we arrived School and I stepped out of



the car, the first person I saw was Matthias.

"Shawna?" He called and my mind drifted back to what I had gone through. It's also because of him that I got punished, if I wasn't close to him then this couldn't have happened.

"Hey" I called simply and walked passed him trying so hard not to feel a thing.

Even if he is a poor guy that's completely innocent, you still have to avoid him because you no longer own yourself, I told myself.

"Shawna?" I heard him call my name again but I pretended not to hear. I hastened my foot steps to class.

We are having an important class today.

I continued walking hastily till I got into class.

"Shawna?" He called again also getting into class.

"What did I do? Are you mad at me or something?" He asked.

"No Matthias, I just need space from you. I'm sorry, I no longer wanna be your friend. Forgive me for that"

I looked at him and said.

"What?? Why? What did I do please? You can't do this to me Shawna. You are my only friend, are you gonna abandon me too because I'm not your class? Because I'm not from a wealthy family too?" He asked and I held myself from saying anything.

"Are you? You don't like me anymore because of that. You are sick of me now that you know you can't benefit anything from me? I was worried sick about you because you didn't come to school, now you're here and you give me this attitude?" He asked.

"Stop! Stop it Matthias! It's not that way okay. Stop making me look like a bad person, I'm also trying hard to survive okay. I don't wanna die that's the reason I have to stop being friends with you. You have to understand that" I screamed at him totally losing it.

Does he think I suddenly wanna stop being friends with him for no reason.

"You have to explain it to me Shawna, I don't understand a thing you're saying" he screamed

back.

"I don't have anything to explain to you!" I answered.

"Then I refuse to understand you" he concluded and left the class.

I breathed in heavily and sat down properly.

This shouldn't be happening to me. I hate this, everyone in class is staring at me.

I don't want this, I thought ruffling my hair.

Matthias's POV

Oh shit! F\*\*k you Shawna! Not now. If you are gonna act like this then I have no option than to do it today.

I have no option. I was beginning to foolishly like you. Before my stupid feelings get the best of me, I'll have to do it.

TBC

Who expected that?

The game begins...

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 36-37

.

© Blessing

.

(Imposter)

Dillion's POV

Flashback to the hospital.

"Come on Dill, don't have me killed. Instead of killing me, why don't we have fun?" Matthew said from where he was.

"Come on" he said again and walked to the door, he opened it and held it open for me.

I stared at him and walked out, he closed the door and followed me.

"You wanna see her first?" He asked but I didn't

answer him.

"I'll take that as a yes, come this way" he urged taking me towards a VIP section. "You requested for her to be placed at the VIP ward, she was and thinking about it, she's such a beautiful lucky girl but unfortunately I don't know who she is to you because you refused telling me but I think she is a good girl" he kept on talking until we got to her ward.

I looked inside her ward through the transparent glass door and saw her laughing and playing with her phone, alongside one of the wards.

She doesn't look sick anymore, I thought and left immediately while Matthew followed me from behind.

"I thought you were gonna get in, are you scared of seeing her or what? Huh! Huh!" He kept saying, disturbing my peace.

"Will you shut up Matt? You talk like a woman" I hushed.

"What? How dare you compare me to a woman? Anyways let's have fun" he yelled then said.

I walked out to the garage.

"Wait, what? Why are we here? Are you leaving now? Shouldn't we grab a cup of coffee or something? I thought we were gonna be having fun!" He kept screaming while I got into my car.

"I aren't no kid Matt, go play with your patients" I breathed out then ignited the car engine and drove out leaving him staring at the back of the car.

Later that same day.

"Um..Boss I saw that guy again, I did some investigation using the cards that fell off his pocket. The cards aren't real, they are his fake identity card. The bastard came prepared, I still don't know which gang he is from, I think his name Matthias is also forged, everything about him is fake" Luwis who had come into my office narrated.

"Alright, you can go now. I have my ways incase anything happens" I said to him puffing out smokes.

"Okay boss" he concurred and stood up.

"I'll go now" he added and left.

Who is this strange guy? Why is he sneaking around Shawna? Well, I guess he is only seeking for his death.

Present day.

Shawna's POV

Immediately classes ended I stood up from my sit, throughout my stay in class Matthias didn't show up. I kind of feel sorry, he is just a poor guy but I also have to survive.

I'll have to leave all my life without friends from the outside then, I thought as I carried my small designer bag.

A lot of male students still stare at me everyday, it makes me uncomfortable but I don't give them much thoughts mainly because Matthias is there to occupy me with other things. With him saying different things, I gat no time to worry about the others but now I feel so nervous.

I got out of the classroom and was about heading to the garage where my new driver dropped me off today but stopped because someone called my

name.

It is an unfamiliar voice, I turned to see a student like me.

"Shawna, there is an emergency, your friend Matthias wants to kill himself in the male's restroom, I ran to bring you before he does that, I think he has gone crazy" the girl narrated breathlessly.

"What??" I shrieked my heart skipping.

"Yes Shawna, we have to go, you have to see him" she said and started running and I followed her.

Why on Earth will Matthias decide to kill himself? Is he crazy? Yeah, probably crazy, I thought as I ran after her.

We got to the male restroom and she stopped and opened the door. "He is inside. Go ahead and stop him" she said and I nodded and got in.

I saw Matthias there but he wasn't trying to kill himself. He was just backing me.

"Matthias?" I called, shocked.



"Were you trying to kill yourself?" I asked and he turned to face me.

"No, was only trying to get you here" he answered and turned to face me.

"Trying to get me here by framing your own death" I snapped at him.

"Yeah, it doesn't matter what I use to get you, the thing is that I've finally gotten you. You are where exactly I want you to be":he said in a very strange tone.

"Matthias, don't try this shit again, I'll get going now" I said and turned towards the door, I made to open it but couldn't.

"You can't open that, it has been locked from the outside" he said now standing really close to me.

Fear, it struck me again.

I aren't supposed to be scared again, not so soon.

I turned slowly to look at him.

"What..what do you mean Matthias?" I panicked.

"Nothing love, but you're stuck with me here" he responded and took his hand to my hair then brushed it backward.

"Stop it, I want to go out" I muttered.

"Then open the door if you can";he huffed.

I turned towards the door and tried pulling it open but couldn't.

"No! No! No! Stop this Matthias, you told them to lock the door, didn't you?" I turned to him and asked.

"Yes, I told them" he replied.

"Why???" I screamed getting pissed.

He sighed and bent his head.

"You will know why soon Shawna, don't be in a haste, let the students dispatch first" he said.

"No! I can't be here with you. I've gat to go home" I said and tried pulling the door.

"Is someone there???" I screamed and he immediately rushed to me and covered my mouth with his palm.

"You aren't leaving here, Shawna, stop screaming. Don't make me lose my cool on you" he snarled shocking me.

I turned at him with my eyes wide open.

"You...this is not you, you aren't the Matthias I know, are you? You were just pretending all these while, aren't you?" I questioned.

"Yes, yes Shawna. You realized that a little bit late. I aren't who I told you that I am. I have being pretending to you all these while to accomplish the mission given to me" he answered and I shook my head.

"Imposter, that's what you are. I thought you were a poor innocent guy" I mouthed.

"No! I aren't, I'm sorry to say but I aren't. You'll have to deal with that" he responded.

"No! You'll have to deal with that yourself Matthias. I don't care. Whoever the f\*\*k you are just leave me be, I want to get out of here, don't try to stop me" I half yelled.

"Anybod....!!!" I was about screaming again but he held me and covered my mouth.

I tried pushing him off me and I felt a sting on my face, he just slapped me.

I stared at him in anger.

"You are crazy, you bastard" I half yelled.

"Yes, I am" he responded and then brought out a gag (a plain cloth)

"Come here, I won't risk getting caught because of you" he said and pulled me towards him.

I tried pushing him off me but he was too strong. He gaged my mouth and pushed to to the floor.

I sat down forcefully and he squatted to stare at me.

"I'm sorry but it was all planned. My meeting you was planned from the very beginning, if you hadn't done what you did today in class I could have continued shifting this day."

"You don't like me. I shouldn't feel a thing for you either. Your actions caused you this Shawna, it is bond to happen tho but it couldn't have happened

today if you hadn't behaved like that. But I'm gonna do something you'll really hate me for, after taking you out of here. I'll take you to my hideout, I'll make love to you, you don't know how long I've been supressing the urge to do that. I won't tell my boss that I've gotten you till I'm done with you, you're gonna hate me more after what I'll do to you. I'm also sorry but no sorry" he concluded his rubbish.

I kept staring at him. He also stared back at me.

"You'll hate me, won't you? Don't worry I'll make it a bit romantic for you" he asked and said then he stood straight.

"When I get you to my boss, you're gonna spill everything you know about the twin, the one you're with presently. How you met and why you are with him."

"You are gonna tell him how much he has currently, both in Mexico and here. You are gonna tell him what he is planning, why he is gathering an army, you are gonna spill everything to him, understood?" He asked in a cold voice.

"Oh! I forget that you can't speak. I bet you understand" he said after few minutes of silence.

Tears gathered up my eyes.

I don't really understand what my crime is here.

Why am I always being punished?

Oh Dillion! Even if you don't care about me, I hope you will set aside the coldness you feel and really save me because it seems you're the reason why this is presently happening to me.

But how will they even know? They won't know. No one knows!

Mom and dad, please also help your daughter. I did nothing wrong here.

Dillion's POV

"Boss!!! Boss!!" I heard and then my office door bursted open.

"Luwis have you lost your goddamn mind? Why are you screaming?" I snapped at him.

"I'm sorry but...the driver returned without Shawna. He waited for Shawna for three hours but couldn't

find her. Shawna, won't just disappear, she has been abducted - probably" he explained.

"What?? He didn't see her?" I asked.

"Yes" he answered.

"Go call speedo for me, I want him to track her whereabouts" I ordered.

"Okay" he answered and left.

Thirty minutes later he returned with speedo.

"You remember the last device I gave you?" I asked speedo. He is one of my boys, he doesn't stay here with me.

"Yes boss" he answered.

"Track it and find out it's whereabouts" I instructed.

"On it boss" he replied and brought out the laptop he came with.

In few minutes he was able to track it.

"It's around laxis area, it's actually moving" he said.

I pulled out my drawer and brought out a gun and

loaded it with bullet.

"Still in laxis area" speedo confirmed.

"Stay here, I wanna get her myself" I instructed.

"But.... Boss lemme come with you. I know the bastard's face, it will be more...."

"No one follows me, we aren't going to fight. I'm just going to get her. Stay here, that's an order" I rasped.

"Okay boss, I'm sorry" he apologized as I tucked the gun into my trouser pocket.

Now, it's time to finally meet you Matthias. I've been curious about who you are? Who sent you? I've been curious, it's time to finally meet you.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Sequence 38-40

.

© Blessing



(Help)

Writer's POV

An hour earlier.

Matthias knocked Shawna out when he was sure that the students has all left. He broke down the restroom door and carried her out to his car parked at the garage.

Then he drove out afterwards towards his hideout. He and few other boys actually stays there some times, he was praying that by the time he gets there with Shawna that non of them will be there. He really need to do the things he has been restricting himself to do.

But unfortunately for him, when he got to the hideout he met two other boys there. He had to beg them not to say a word to their boss till the next day and they all agreed in hope that they will also have a taste of Shawna.

Matthias carried her and led her on his bed and then he tied her hands together and removed the gag in her mouth.

He carried a little quantity of water and poured it on her face, her eyes flushed open.

"What? Where are we?" Shawna asked her eyes running round the rough looking room.

"We are where no one can find us" he answered her with a big smirk plastered on his face.

"After I'm done with you, I'm taking you to my boss" he added and sat on the bed.

Shawna immediately rolled down from the bed hitting herself hard on the floor. She got up on her feet which wasn't tied in an attempt to escape but matthias was faster. He caught her and threw her back on the bed, she landed roughly on the hard big bed and groaned.

"There is no escaping from me, Shawna" matthias groaned really angry she tried to escape.

"Stop all these madness, just let me go, I want say a word about you matthias. Please just let me go" Shawna cried.

"I'm sorry love, I can't grant you that request"

Matthias replied her.

He loosen the ropes he tied her hands with, he then tied it around the wood holding the bed together.

Then finally he tied her hands to the wood.

"Stop...please Matthias, I didn't mean all those words I said to you. I didn't mean them okay?"

Shawna pleaded but he turned deaf ears.

Shawna was putting on a gown, it made it a bit easy for Matthias. He held the tip of the dress from her shoulder and pulled it down forcefully.

He didn't want her struggles to make things difficult so he was quick. The gown was completely off in the next second.

"No...No..!! Please Matthias" Shawna kept apologizing and pleading.

She didn't know that Matthias's mind was no longer with him the moment he set his eyes on her mini naked body. All he wanted to do at that moment was to devour her.

Gosh! She looks so sweet, he thought in his mind.

Slowly he covered her body with his and posited her head in one place.

"I told you I'll make it a little romantic for you, let's start with a kiss" Matthias said and placed his lips on hers.

\*\*\*\*

Meanwhile Dillion had managed to locate lasis and was now around there, so close to Matthias hideout.

He came down from his car and looked around. There weren't much good looking buildings around.

Where is she? He thought his hands fixed on his waist.

He walked around the area and suddenly he's eyes caught the weast bin just by his side.

He saw Shawna's designer bag and went to pick it up, he opened the bag and found her cellphone inside.

No wonder the tracker stopped here, he thought.

Then his eyes again caught a building, a small bungalow just few miles away from the weast bin.

It might be there, he's mind told him, then he walked to the house and stood right outside listening to see if he could get a head.

\*\*\*\*

Shawna shook her head repeatedly and tightened her mouth, she felt disgusted that Matthias had placed his lips on hers. She was also in tears.

Matthias became more angry at her, he slapped her again and she cried out.

"So, I am disgusting to you huh?" He read her facial expression and understood the meaning.

Shawna only cried because of the slap, it hurt her like hell, she thought her skin was gonna pull away.

"Well, I will no longer try to be romantic with you" he snarled and spread her legs open angrily.

Shawna screamed immediately, she screamed with all her might in case, just in case someone could run in and save her.

"Help!!!!!!!!!!!!!"

Her screaming only annoyed Matthias the more, he

knew he had to gag her again in case, just to be careful.

He brought out the plain cloth and gaged her with it.

Shawna continued crying and screaming nevertheless, the last time Dillion did this to her, she knows how it had hurt her, she doesn't want it again, especially from another, especially from someone like Matthias.

Matthias climbed onto the bed again and unhooked her bra, again he was mesmerized, everything about her is beautiful, he thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

Outside Dillion had made to leave but heard a voice scream out, he wasn't so sure, it sounded distant.

He doesn't wanna barge into the wrong house too, he is being careful.

"Hey Matthias, make her keep her goddamn voice down okay, do not exhaust her completely, remember I'll also f\*\*k her" he heard another voice speak from inside the house then he concluded.

This was it. It's the house.

He stared at the wooden door for a while.

Should I break it down or knock on it? He thought.

Knocking will be better, he concluded and knocked on the door which got opened by a guy who was obviously smoking.

"Hey, what do you want?" The guy questioned, his face hard.

He got replied with a slap that made he leave the door immediately. Dillion kicked the door open to see a second guy there but couldn't see Shawna, but then again he could clearly hear her muffles. It angered him, it angered him to know that someone else was touching her, it made him so so mad. He is gonna kill each and everyone one of them there.

.

.

(In pains)

## Writer's POV

Shawna kept crying as Matthias touched her nipples, she felt worm crawling inside her body. She felt so so disgusted, something she never felt with Dillion. Maybe because he owns her.

"Oh....my....you look so so sexy...gosh everything about you is lovely" Matthias drooled over Shawna.

He took his mouth to her nipple and used his tongue to lick it.

"Oh saviour" Shawna cried as tingling feelings clouded her.

Then she started hearing noise outside the room, her heart beat increased. She doesn't know if it's also an enemy or a friend, she doesn't know and it's scares her.

Matthias didn't hear the noise coming out from the sitting room early but when he did, he figured out that he has been discovered.

Immediately he brought out a gun from under his bed and pointed it directly at the door. Whoever



comes in through that door is gonna go down first, he thought.

\*\*\*\*

Dillion didn't use his gun after slapping the guy that opened the door for him. He wanted to kill them with his own bare hands.

He walked towards the second that had a bottle of alcohol with him, he pulled him up and without warnings snapped his neck to the side.

Cracking sounds was heard, the guy opened his mouth and shut his eyes - dead.

The first guy was already behind him by the time he got finished with the second.

The guy made to punch him but he dogged the punch and hit him on his knees.

The guy crunched to the floor on his knees. Dillion fixed his hand around the guy's neck, he stared at him directly in the eyes and did the same thing to him, he broke his neck.

That one also died instantly.

Now to Matthias, he thought and went to the door  
Shawna cries were coming out from.

He moved back and kicked the door, the door didn't  
break. He kicked it again, again and again until the  
door finally gave way.

It revealed Matthias putting a gun at him and  
Shawna who was naked on the bed with her hands  
and mouth tied.

Dillion walked into the room his eyes fixed on the  
weeping Shawna.

Matthias immediately released a shot from his gun  
and it hit Dillion on his shoulder.

Shawna gasped in fear.

Dillion only got more angry, as Matthias made to  
shot him again he started walking towards him.

Matthias released a shot again but Dillion dodged it  
and grabbed him.

"I'll enjoy killing you" Dillion growled like a beast.

Dillion held him tightly on his neck and the gun  
Matthias was holding fell off his hand. Dillion pined

Matthias to the wall and pressed him hard against it.

Matthias was shocked, shocked at how strong Dillion is but nevertheless he raised his hand and punched him hard, it didn't really affect Dillion but he dropped him down on the floor and turned to see a bottle.

He grabbed the bottle and smached it on Matthias head.

"Ah shit! F\*\*k you bastard!" Matthias groaned and made to escape, he was already bleeding from his head but escaping at that moment was all that clouded his mind.

Dillion left him, he let him crawl to the door before he went to pull him back. Matthias crawled again to the door and Dillion pulled him back.

Seems like he is enjoying what he is doing. Dillion watched him crawl to the door for the third time and he pulled him backwards again.

"I need you to tell me who sent you before I finally end you" Dillion snapped at him and shot his two legs.

Matthias screamed out in pains and Shawna cried out the more. She couldn't believe what was happening.

Matthias, the guy she thought was a poor innocent guy who was trying to make it in life is right before her eyes crying out in pains after attempting to rape her.

And the person dealing with him is non other than Dillion, she felt relieved but also sad, bittered.

"Who sent you?" Dillion asked picking a stool to sit down on.

Matthias didn't answer, he kept crying and rolling on the floor, his blood all over the room.

"I'll ask you again. Who the f\*\*k sent you?" Dillion rasped.

"To hell with you, I won't reveal a thing to you, just kill me" Matthias screamed.

"Okay, your wish is actually my command" Dillion groaned out a reply and stood up from the iron stool.

He pulled Matthias up from the floor, positioned his

head well, and smached the stool on his head.

"Oh christ!!" Shawna cried again. She felt like vomiting, she has never witnessed something like this in her entire life.

It made her shake.

Matthias fell flat on the floor after the stool hit him hard on his head and laid - lifeless.

Dillion knew he was already dead but he wasn't gonna take chances, he doesn't want him to see another Matthias in future, whether his spirit or real body.

He took out his gun and shot him again in his head. Satisfied, he fixed his gun back into his pocket and turned towards Shawna who was crying, she was still tied and naked.

He walked towards the bed and removed the gag from her mouth.

Shawna breathed out in relief. He went ahead and untied her tied hands, immediately her hands were loss, she hugged him.

This shocked Dillion, it also shocked her that she could do that.

The nerve of you!! Dillion wanted to scream and pull her away from his body but didn't, he just couldn't do that.

Shawna sobbed the more with her hands tightly fixed around his back, her chest and breast again his own chest. She didn't mind the fact that she was even doing this naked, he has seen her naked before afterall. She sobbed and sobbed, happy he didn't push her away.

She only let him go when she realized that, he was also shot.

Damn! Her eyes widened as she stared at his wounded shoulder, blood already covered his white shirt.

Dillion saw her eyes on his shoulder and stood up.

"Put on your clothes" he hushed and started walking out of the door.

Shawna found her bra and wore it on, then she wore

her gown and rushed out of the room, not without staring at Matthias' cold body for the last time.

She shook her head as tears dropped from her eyes.

"I wish it didn't end like this Matthias, but good bye" she said and rushed into the sitting room to see Dillion there.

He was sitting down with his shirt unbuttoned, looks like he was tending to his own injury.

He took out a pen from his pocket and fixed it into the bullet hole. He didn't notice that he has wasted a lot of blood. He didn't notice because he was so angry and now the pains are about to kill him, he has to stop the bleeding fast for him to survive.

Shawna walked closer to him and stopped, watching what he was doing.

He fixed the pin of the pen on the bullet and closed his eyes, then he started pulling the bullet out.

"Gosh!" Shawna exclaimed. She has never seen anything like this before.

Dillion groaned out in extreme pain when he finally

pulled the bullet out. More blood rushed out from the hole.

Dillion breathed out in relief that the bullet was out of his body.

"Give me that" he said to Shawna pointing at the bottle of alcohol there.

Shawna quickly grabbed the bottle and gave it to him, she watched him pour it into the hole.

"Shit!!" Dillion groaned out again trying to suppress the pain.

He dropped the bottle of alcohol feeling so so weak. Shawna noticed this, she decided to finish up the next thing.

Even if she didn't know about the first and second thing he did, she knows the third thing to do.

She looked for a clean cloth and went to him. Dillion knew what she was about to do and allowed her.

She positioned herself properly beside him and tied that area up with the cloth to help stop the bleeding.

She tried looking for a pain relief drug there but he



stopped her.

"Let's go" he said and tried standing up. Shawna held him to make things easier for him but he tried removing her hands, she didn't listen, her hold on him tightened and he later gave in to her.

She assisted him out to where he parked his car.

He got into the driver sit and immediately made a call.

"Matthew" he said into the phone.

"I'm coming over to your house right now, I've been shot! Bullet out, I need proper treatment" he said again into the phone and threw it aside.

He rested his hand on the steering trying to regain his strength. Shawna watched him and felt sorry for him. He got hurt saving her, she wished that she can drive but she can't drive.

She looked around the car and saw a bottle of sealed water.

She offered him the water and he raised his head up and collected the water without uttering a word,

then in one gulp, he finished the water.

Seems like he needed it.

He ignited the engine after drinking the water. Then he started driving, not with all his energy but he tried driving really fast, he drove so roughly, his eyes felt like closing but he didn't give in to it.

He drove roughly until he got to Matthew's house.

Immediately he stopped in front of the house, without even coming down from his car, he finally gave in.

He passed out.

.

THE END

.

TO BE CONTINUED FROM SEASON TWO..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

## Sequence 1

.

## © Blessing

.

.

## Writer's POV

The fear in Shawna's heart increased.

What? What happened to him? Hope he is not dead?  
She thought fearfully as she touched him.

She tried raising his head up but couldn't, he was  
way too heavy for her to handle.

She quickly got down from the car and turned to  
open his door, she opened the door and continued  
trying her best to probably bring him back to life.

Just then Matthew arrived with his car, he parked  
and came down to see Shawna trying her best on

Dillion.

"Let me" he said and handed a box with him to Shawna and she collected it from him.

"Why didn't you come straight to the hospital?" Matthew groaned as he pulled him out of the car.

"Damn!! You are so heavy" Matthew said trying to make the unconscious Dillion stand on his feet but it didn't work.

Matthew breathed out feeling exhausted.

"Go in and call the guards for me" he said to Shawna who nodded and walked to the huge gate and knocked on it. It got opened by a very huge guard who has a straight and mean look on.

"Who are you?" He groaned out as if Shawna was the cause of all his problems.

"Um....I am" she pointed at the car for the guard to see Matthew.

"Hey come over Biggie" Matthew shouted from where he was.

Biggie immediately ran towards the car and helped

in carrying Dillion out.

It scared Shawna, the feeling that he might be dead started bringing tears to her eyes.

No! Please, let him stay alive. I don't want him dead, she cried inwardly as she followed Biggie and Matthew into his house.

Matthew asked Biggie to take Dillion to the guest room and Biggie did. Biggie laid him there and left afterwards.

"Okay let's see" Matthew said taking a sit beside Dillion on the bed.

Shawna stood at the other side of the bed, her eyes fixed on Dillion, tears still pouring out from her eyes.

Matthew untied the cloth around his shoulder and inspected the injury.

He brought out the necessary instrument needed to treat him after inspecting the wound. He treated him and due to the fact that Dillion had lost a lot of Dillion, he called the hospital and ordered for Dillion's particular blood type be brought.

Matthew doesn't need for payment to be made first, he knows that no matter what happens. Dillion will surely recover and all the payments and more will be paid so he did everything that should be done for him and now Dillion is laying on the bed sleeping.

Matthew breathed out in relief, he is finally done with Dillion.

He stared up at Shawna who has been crying for about four hours, he shook his head.

Isn't she tired of shedding tears? He thought.

"Hey, Shawna" he called and she looked at him.

"Come with me, he needs his space. Shouldn't you also be resting? You had a surgery done on you two three days ago" Matthew said walking out of the guest room.

Shawna wiped the tears off her face and followed Matthew out.

"I'm okay" she answered simply as she followed him.

"Really? You must have been scared, you also need to rest. Dillion won't wake up till tomorrow, why

don't you make use of the other guest room for now?" He inquired.

Shawna bowed her head in thought.

Should she stay here? Of course she can't leave Dillion all by himself here. That will be cruel of her.

"Um..okay sir" Shawna stared up and said.

"Yeah, the room is just beside the room Dillion is in, that one" Matthew pointed out to her and she nodded and made to leave but he stopped her.

"Um...I can't let you stay like this either, you are covered in blood. You need a shower, a new pair cloth and you also need food before a good sleep" Matthew said making her stare at him.

"Hmm... luckily few of my sister's clothes are still here and I think it will fix you, not exactly but it's manageable, follow me. Let's get it" Matthew beckoned and started climbing the stairs.

With her gaze on the floor, she followed him till he stopped at a room. She waited for him to go in and he did, after few minutes of waiting, he came out

with a shirt and a short.

"This will do" he handed it to her.

She bowed her head slightly in thanks before she left.

At that moment, talking was the last thing she wanna do.

She went back to the second guest room and had her bath, then came out afterwards putting on the dress Matthew handed to her.

She was taken to the dinning table by one of the maids there.

She sat down and started eating what was offered to her, shortly, Matthew joined her on the table.

He wasn't eating, he just watched her eat to her fill. There were a lot of questions for him to ask.

For example WHO THE HELL SHOT DILLION?

He waited for her to finish eating and when she was done he started with his questions.

"What the hell happened? Why was Dillion shot?"



Matthew asked her.

Shawna stared at him wondering if it was okay to answer that question but she decided to answer it in a simple way.

"He got shot trying to save me" she answered.

"You were abducted?" He asked again.

"Yes" she answered.

Matthew relaxed back on his sit and watched her closely for a while.

"You must have been really scared, huh!?" He asked.

"Yes, I was really scared" Shawna replied truthfully.

"What were you really scared of? Of the fact that you got abducted or of the fact Dillion is in that condition?" His question made her dumbfounded.

"Bot..both" she whispered out a reply after some thinking.

"Which one were you more scared of? The first of second?" Matthew asked again.

"The second" Shawna replied truthfully.

Matthew sighed.

"Who are you to him?" He went on and asked.

Shawna didn't reply this one, she couldn't.

"You have feelings for him, don't you?" He asked this one, it made her more confused.

How is that even possible? Am I not asking for death by possibly liking him? She thought.

"No! There is no way I like him" she replied him firmly.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 2-3

.

© Blessing

.

(Leaving)

Shawna's POV

I don't know the reason behind his question but I thought and answered it.

Hell! There is no way I have feelings for him. How can I even develop it? He is more like my master, my owner. It's clearly impossible. It can't never happen, I'll just putting my own self at risk by developing feelings for him. Feelings that can never be acknowledged, feelings that can bring me closer to death by punishment.

No! There is no way that is ever happening, I thought deeply to myself.

"Why? Why don't you? Isn't he handsome enough or are you just lying?" The doctor's voice snapped me out of thought.

"No...no...it's not that sir, it's just that it isn't possible. There shouldn't be such feelings between us, I am not allowed to have such feelings for him" she

explained.

"Then why? Who are you to him? I'm curious, I've known Dillion for a very long time so it's okay to tell me" he insisted.

"I'm...just, I'm a nobody to him sir, just like a mere property" I mumbled the last part giving in to his questions.

"A mere property?" He asked and then gasped.

"You mean a slave; a s\*x slave right?" He asked.

I felt bittered at the mention of a s\*x slave but how did he know? I just mentioned a property, how did he get to know that am just a s\*x to him?

"Yes, how did you know?" I answered then asked.

"Because he has had one before, or is it two? Yeah, I think it's two but the both of them has died" he answered and I swallowed a large quantity of saliva.

"Died? How did they both die?" I asked fear engulfing me.

"Um...I don't no, but all I heard is that they died" he answered then stood up.

"Goodnight, go to now" he said and left.

My heart started pounding.

How did they die? Who killed or what exactly killed two of his formal s\*x slave? I thought as I stood up headed for the guest room.

Oh please lord! I don't want to imagine it.

I got into the room and lie down then drifted to sleep afterwards.

\*The next day.\*

Writer's POV

Towards morning, Dillion turned restlessly on his bed for a while before he's eyes flushed open.

He looked around the room, everywhere still looked dark.

He struggled with his movements and sat up on the bed and then took his eyes to his hurting left shoulder. There is a bandage covering the wound.

He came down from the bed and turned on the light. This isn't the first time that this has actually

happened to him and this wasn't the first time he is sleeping in this particular room. It had happened twice, he has slept here twice.

He went into the bathroom afterwards and washed his face clean then his mind recalled the day's activity. How he had saved Shawna and ended up fainting.

Has the cops found those dead bodies? Or has the person that sent them found their bodies? He thought.

If not for the fact that he got shot he could have taken care of the place well then report to the cops himself about the bodies.

Of course he already knows what he'll tell them, it's an act of self defence and afterall they were the ones that came looking for trouble in the first place.

He breathed out as he stared at the mirror.

Shawna. Where is she? He thought and left the bathroom, he looked around the room and couldn't find any trace of her.

He opened the door of his room and went out. He opened the door next to his and finally found Shawna there, laying and sleeping maybe peacefully.

He turned to go back to his room but stopped because of the footsteps he heard.

He took his eyes to the stairs to see Matthew climbing down the stairs.

"I know it it's high time you woke up, how do you feel?" Matthew asked coming to stand in front of him.

"I'm okay" Dillion answered him and he nodded.

"I think I'll be spending the whole of today here matt. I'll leave tomorrow" Dillion said and Matthew nodded.

"You can, you hungry? Will ask the maids to make something for you" Matthew asked him.

"Nay, not now. Too early to eat" Dillion answered and went back into the room to lie down.

4 hours later.

Shawna woke up and quickly went to wash her face, she also brushed her teeth with the brush she found inside the bathroom. After that, she rushed out to Dillion's room. She opened the door and got in but couldn't find Dillion there.

She left the room immediately in fear.

Did his condition get worst that he got moved to the hospital? She thought fearfully as she went in search of either Matthew or Dillion himself.

Then she found them both at the dining room.

She immediately felt relieved.

Dillion was looking better.

She walked slowly to them.

'Shawna, you're awake?' Matthew on seeing her asked.

"Yes..Good morning" she answered then greeted.

Dillion looked up at her to see what she was wearing.

He stared at her with an awkward look. As if asking '



what the hell are you putting on?'

She noticed the look and took a good look at her own self, she didn't notice properly yesterday. The clothes Matthew had given to her were oversized, it swallowed her up but she didn't notice, now that she is noticing she felt so ashamed and embarrassed.

Matthew noticed and laughed.

"What is it? You were okay with it yesterday?" He chuckled.

"Take a sit' he added pulling a sit close to him.

Shawna walked toward him and took a sit, the sit was so close to Matthew but her mind didn't even get there until she again saw the look on Dillion's face.

He looked annoyed seeing that their sits were almost joined together thereby making her body touch Matthew.

She immediately stood up and went to another sit so far from Matthew, it surprised the hell out of him.

He also didn't notice the closeness, even if he noticed he won't bother. Now that Shawna has suddenly moved to another sit, he used his head to calculate it.

She moved because of Dillion. He has probably told her with his eyes. He couldn't help but chuckle at the thought that Dillion was being jealous.

"I don't do ladies Dill" he couldn't help but remind Dillion who only rolled his eyes at him.

A maid appeared and served Shawna her breakfast.

And for the first time since Shawna showed up Dillion spoke up.

"Be quick with your meal. Luwis will be here to take you back to the mansion" He said and shawna's brows perked up.

Isn't he leaving too? Why am I the only one leaving? She thought and almost said.

'I'm not leaving here without you' but held herself.

.

(To him)

Shawna's POV

Few minutes later.

I finished up with my meal and got up. I am the last person to finish even tho Dillion asked me to be fast with my meal.

I called a maid there to come pick the plates and she carried it away.

I started towards the guest room that Dillion is staying at. Like I'm done and I don't know what else to do.

I walked over to his door and knocked on it.

I waited but didn't hear any reply. Still standing there, I started hearing car hones outside.

Could it be luwis? He is here to take me? I thought and rushed outside to really see him.

"Hey" he called immediately coming down from the car.

"Hi" I coed and he supri sed me by pulling me into a

hug when he got closer.

"Um..luwis" I called and moved away from him.

"I was worried about you, especially when you guys didn't return last night. Ma'am Sandra is so worried, well not until the boss called this morning and he also asked me to come pick you up. Hope you aren't hurt?" He explained then started examining me.

"Am fine Luwis, I'm okay" I stopped him from searching further.

"That bastard called Matthias. How dare he abduct you? Hope he is dead, huh!?" Luwis asked with visible anger.

"Um...."

"You're here" Dillion's voice suddenly asked interrupting us from behind.

I quickly turned to face him.

He's hands tucked into his trouser pocket, he was standing and staring at us both.

"Yes boss" Luwis answered.

"Take her home" he ordered.

"Yes of course" Luwis replied and started leaving.

I guess I should follow him. I turned to follow him but Dillion's voice stopped me.

I turned back to stare at him.

"Don't you ever say anything about me being shot to anyone" he warned.

"Ye...yes" I drawled.

Why doesn't he want em to know? I thought and finally went to meet up with Luwis.

I took a final look at Dillion standing at the entrance, then got into the car Luwis came with. Luwis reversed and left the compound.

Writer's POV

Dillion kept staring until the car vanished, he then turned to go inside but was stopped by Matthew who was about going to the hospital.

"You know I could just stay here with you today. That will be a very good thing for me but I gat to go.

Since I'm the head doctor, all surgeries lies on my shoulder. On the shoulder of Matthew" he said making emphasis on the word Matthew.

"Yeah whatever" Dillion rolled his eyes at him and made to walk pass him.

"You like her?" Matthew asked making Dillion turn his attention to him.

He was firstly confused but later got the idea of what and who Matthew was referring to.

He sighed and made to ignore him.

"You know it'll be really good if you're a gay" Matthew said again making Dillion look at him this time with a disgusted face.

"I'm not a gay" Matthew told him firmly then started leaving.

"I know, alright. I'm just saying" Matthew yelled at him as he vanished.

He scoffed and walked to his car then drove to the hospital.

\*\*\*\*

Luwis and Shawna arrived shortly at the mansion and they came down.

Shawna immediately ran to look for ma'am Sandra. When she found her, she embraced her recalling all the bad things that happened when she got abducted and was almost raped but thankfully Dillion saved the day.

"Oh child, what really happened? Are you okay?" Ma'am Sandra asked her.

"I'm okay ma'am Sandra" Shawna pouted like a kid while replying.

"Thank goodness you are but where is Dillion, where is he?" She asked alarmed.

"Well... he is....."she paused when she recalled she is not supposed to tell anyone he got shot. If she tells him that he is at Matthew's place, she'll find out that he got injured.

What am I gonna tell her? She wondered.

"Um..at he is friend's" she drawled her reply a bit.

"What friend is that?" Ma'am Sandra asked curious.

"I don't know" she answered and looked back at Luwis for backup.

"He got some stuff to do ma'am, he is okay" Luwis said and Ma'am sighed.

"Okay now, explain everything that happened" Ma'am Sandra requested taking a sit.

Shawna started explaining, she explained and explained remembering to omit the part where Dillion got shot.

"Oh good lord! Thank goodness he came on time" Ma'am Sandra exclaimed after she explained.

"Yes" Shawna nodded with a smile on her face.

\*\*\*\*\*

The next day which was Sunday. Dillion arrived and went straight to his room.

Shawna who has been expecting him to arrive became excited and nervous at the same time. She doesn't know how his wound is healing up and she wants to know.

He got shot all because he was tryna save me right?



She thought and got out.

She ran all the way to the kitchen, when she got there. She got a tray and took out an apple, a strawberry and grapes then she carried them back to his room up.

She got to his door and knocked on it. She didn't get a reply immediately but later got one.

"Come in" Dillion's voice said.

She exhaled and opened the door then stepped in to see him walking out of the bathroom.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 4-6

.

© Blessing

.

(Locked)

Unknown's POV

"What the hell happened here?" The boss exclaimed wide eyes as he saw Bobby and zazzi lying down dead on the floor.

"Who did this to them?" He asked out in anger but I remained silent. He hasn't even seen Matthias body yet.

What is he gonna do once he finds he's son's dead body on the floor? I thought.

"Answer me!! Who did this to them??" He roared out.

"Um..boss...boss, I also found them like this. I don't know what happened" I answered him a bit shaken.

"Where is Matthias? Why haven't I heard from him? Where is he?" He asked and I took my gaze to the floor - speechless.

"I said where is he??? Do you want to join them?" He

thundered angrily.

"Bo... boss, he also died" I mumbled my answer.

"What? What did you just say?" He matched forward as he questioned.

I became petrified and moved back.

"He is in the other room" I pointed out to the room quickly and he stopped moving closer to me.

He turned and headed for the room and I followed him slowly from behind.

"Matthias?" He called visibly shaken.

The lunatic that killed him has no mind at all. Could it be an assassin? I wondered.

"Who...who did this to you Matthias?" He shrieked going down on his knees beside Matthias body.

Blood filled the whole room. He's wasted blood.

He's head looked like it had been smached by a moving truck.

"Who did this to you Matthias? Who?" The boss asked with a shaken up voice. He could no longer

control himself.

I bet he is gonna cry like a baby anytime from now.

But we all thought that he never really like Matthias tho because Matthias came from a one night stand he had when he was way younger, he doesn't approve or pay much attention to him but Matthias managed to gain his attention.

Matthews had promised to prove his worth to his father so he can also be recognized. Proving his worth has managed to lead him to an early grave, I thought and sighed.

"I'm gonna find out the beast that did this to you. I'm gonna have his whole family killed, every single person that means something to him is gonna die Matthias. He is gonna watch them die one after the other. I promise you that, I will die fulfilling this promise to you son" he cried at the end and I sighed.

I never knew he loved him. No one knew, he always acted strong, I thought again and sighed.

He stood up from the floor afterwards.

"Get the whole squad, find out who did this. We are gonna go for war" he commanded.

"Yes Boss, on it" I answered.

Writer's POV

Dillion turned to stare at Shawna, he's eyes went to what she was carrying then back to her face.

After staring at her blankly, he walked over to his closet and threw it open. He brought out some clothes afterwards and made to wear them.

"I'll just turn around" Shawna who has been staring at him without knowing what to tell him that really brought her said then she turned.

Dillion didn't reply her but kept doing his thing. When she suspected that he must have clothed himself, she turned to stare at him and saw him going towards a desk at a side of his room.

She started walking towards him, when she got to him. She kept the tray containing the fruits and gulped hard.

"Get me milk, take this away" he looked up at her

and said then continued with the laptop he opened up.

"Okay" she said happily and ran out with the tray.

She was happy that he didn't yell at her or command her out of his room.

She ran all the way down and got a cup, she brought out the powdered milk there and took warm water from the dispenser. Then she put in a large quantity of milk into the cup and stirred it.

She smiled at it then dropped the powdered milk back. She took out another tray and placed the cup of made milk there then left for his room.

She knocked on the door and didn't to wait in other to hear his reply before opening the door and walking in.

She dropped the milk on the desk, after a while, he raised his head up. Grabbed the cup of milk and sipped from it.

Shawna's eyes widened.

Hope he won't reject it? She thought and luckily he

didn't say a word. He continued typing away on his laptop.

She cleared her voice after a while, her eyes fixed on his wounded shoulder which had clothe covering it.

"Um....." she mumbled not knowing how to start it. She has never done this before.

She doesn't know if she's to call him his name but she decided to go for sir.

Even though he looks my age, I bet he is not that young, she thought then called.

"Si...sir" she called out.

He stopped and looked up at her with a what do you want look.

"Your...your shoulder, I wanted to be sure that you are okay" she stuttered.

He just stared at her without replying, it made her nervous. He took his eyes back to his laptop.

"You can go now" he stated.

She turned feeling downcasted. Why isn't he replying her?

She turned and started leaving.

When she got to the door he called her back.

"You are forgetting something" he said and closed up his laptop done with whatever he was doing.

She walked back to the desk, and bent to pick up the tray with the cup sadly.

Due to the way she carried it, the cup still containing milk slipped from the tray and fell on the floor, the cup broke into pieces.

Her heart skipped.

She quickly bent down and made to pick up the broken pieces.

"Leave it clumsy" Dillion bent down slightly then made to pull her up, she immediately turned to stare at him. During the process of her turning to stare at him and him bending to pull her up, their face almost met. Their eyes locked into each other's and they remained that way.



Both hearts raced.

.

.

.

Writer's POV

They kept staring at each other, shockingly to them both. They weren't able to look away.

Shawna tried her best to look elsewhere.

He is going to punish you again Shawna, you're crossing your boundaries. You aren't supposed to look him in the eyes, look away! A voice screamed inside her head and she forced her eyes elsewhere.

"I... I'm...I'm..sorry, I'll...I'll just get a maid here" she stuttered as her heart kept pounding.

Dillion remained muted still staring at her without any visible expression on.

Shawna couldn't tell if he's angry at her but what made her heart race faster was the words he spilled out.

"Get on the bed" he voiced out.

Shawna's eyes widened.

Oh my goodness! He is going to punish me, her mind screamed at her.

Why didn't you control yourself? Why didn't you look away? She questioned herself getting scared. She dreads \*x a lot. Since it had hurt her the two times he did it with her, she doesn't wanna do it again.

She turned towards the bed with shaky legs, she wanted to beg him to forgive her for staring but she couldn't dare do it.

She started undressing herself slowly, she could feel his eyes on her every move.

He just stood and stared.

The way he stared without saying a word made her nervous and anxious. Nervous and anxious about what's coming for her.

When she had completely naked herself she started feeling so shy.

It isn't the first time but she still doesn't really like

going naked in front of a guy. It hasn't really mastered her.

She laid down flat on the bed and shot her eyes close waiting for him to do whatever fast so everything could end.

Dillion who had become surprisedly turned up just by staring at her directly in the eyes was kind of also confused.

Why on Earth will just staring at her eyes affect his body so much? He wondered.

Most times seeing female naked bodies doesn't really move him to have s\*x. Even the two times he had had s\*x with her, he wasn't turned on at all so what's this?

Why did it happen just by staring at her eyes closely? He wondered as he kept staring at her.

After she finished undressing herself and got herself laid on the bed, he's hard on became more obvious. It was shocking, her body is affecting him too much. More than he can understand.

But he couldn't move, he couldn't go to her. It's like he doesn't want her to experience pain at all.

"Get out" he breathed out a command after 15 good minutes of just staring at her.

Shawna who had been waiting shut her eyes open.

Wait! What was that? She thought as she took her eyes to stare at Dillion. She found him going into the inner room there.

Did he just order her out? She thought and stood on her feet.

She picked her clothes from the floor and wore it on. When she was sure that he wasn't coming back, she walked to the door and opened it then left afterwards.

She got to her room forgetting to even call a maid to go clean Dillion's room up. She started thinking.

Doesn't he want her anymore? Why suddenly will he ask her to leave? She wondered.

\*\*\*\*

Dillion groaned angrily at himself for ordering

Shawna out. He's hard, as hard as a rock and it has started hurting.

Damn it! Why on Earth did I do that? He wondered.

Somewhere at Mexico

Dilly's POV

"You can't go in miss, you can't go in" I heard my secretary shouting.

"I am going in, I'm gonna see Dilly whether you like it or not" a voice shouted back. Recognizing the voice I stood up and immediately opened the door to see her.

"Rita!" I called.

"Yes" she answered and pushed my secretary away.

"What are you doing here?" I questioned.

"Look it's high time Dilly, it's high time people learn that I am the mother of your child, do you hear me?" She screamed at me and the secretary threw her mouth open, disappointment clearly visible in her eyes.

"Come in" I groaned lowly. I didn't want the conversation to continue outside.

She pushed me out of the way and got in, then took a sit. I spared my secretary one last glance before shutting the door.

Rita, this bit\*h has spoiled my chances of asking my pretty secretary out to a dinner tonight.

I have been admiring her for a while now, like for a week. She suddenly started becoming more pretty and intelligent and now that I've decided to ask her out like a real gentleman. This bit\*h has decided to ruin my chances.

I walked back to the desk and sat facing her.

"Order something for me to drink Dilly, don't just stare" she rolled her eyes and said.

I spoke into the office telephone and ordered a cup of coffee for her.

"So, why did you come here after all my warnings Rita? How many times have I warned you against coming here?" I questioned trying to suppress the

anger eating me up.

I really curse the day I ran into her at a club. A wild bit\*h she is.

"Well, I'm simply tired of hiding myself and our kid from the public. People gat to know you gat a son Dilly...."

"Look Rita, we already discussed this a million times. It's not the right time" I cut her off.

"When is it gonna be? Our kid is 4years old now. 4 f\*\*k\*ng years old and you want to keep hiding...."

"I aren't hiding him from the public. You know I aren't ready for a kid, I asked you to abort the pregnancy. You refused, I gave you billions to take care of him and you collected the money and now you're here disturbing me again. What the hell do you want from me again Rita? Why do you keep breaking our f\*\*k\*ng agreement?" I asked her unable to control my anger again.

"All I want is for him to be introduced here. Afterall he is your first son, it means that he is gonna be taking over this company after you must be retired

in the future..."

"Are you crazy? I am not my father's eldest son. My twin brother is so stop dreaming!!" I shut her up.

"Look I don't care if you're the eldest, all I know is that, my son is gonna inherit this company and all the properties you have, okay? Bear that in mind, I'll be coming back with him next time and you're gonna be introducing us both to the reporters as your wife to be and son!!" She stated making every words clear to me.

The door open with a worker bringing in the coffee. She stood up and collected the coffee, she opened it and walked outside.

The next thing I heard were screams, I rushed out to see the coffee content dripping down my secretary's head.

Oh goodness!

"Fire her before I come back, I don't need a bit\*h like her here" Rita added before disappearing.

How on Earth? Why did I become unfortunate? I



wondered shocked at everything that just happened.

Valentine's POV

"Holiday is coming up next month sis. You say we are going to spend it in Paris with dad?" I asked Tina.

"Yup" she answered.

"Why? Because Dillion is currently at Paris?" I asked again and she stopped what she was doing. She shrugged her shoulders but didn't reply.

"Don't worry sis, I promise you. I'll help you get Dillion back during this break, because it is the only way I can get closer to his twin brother" I giggled at the last part.

"I wish Tine, but Dillion won't even listen to you" she shrugged and said again.

"Remember the unbreakable promise he made to you?" I asked winking at her.

She looked confused at first but when she recalled it her eyes beamed.

"Oh my gosh! How could I forget that?" She

exclaimed and finally smiled.

"Yes sis, you're getting him back for sure. He doesn't go back on his words so you'll have him again" I assured her.

"And by the way...Andrew called. I see the way he looks at you some times Tina, you need to stay away from him if you're sure you like Dillion because he might end up spoiling things for you" I advised her but didn't hear a reply.

I lifted my head up to see that the room was empty.

Oh great! I've been speaking to myself.

**\*\*Paris\*\***

Unknown' s POV

"Have you found the person that did this yet?" The boss roared out still in pains after losing his son. He's fourth son.

"Um..not completely sure who is it boss but we got a clue" spencer answered him he's fingers on the computer in front of him.

"Here in the CCTV footage, a man can be seen

stepping out of his car but i aren't sure of who he is"  
Spencer said.

I went closer to the computer but can't recognize his face, it looks familiar but can't recognize him even after he zoomed the picture.

"Keep searching. I want results out soon!!" The boss rasped and left the room.

\*A day later\*

Writer's POV

Shawna returned back to the mansion after school so tired.

School has been unusual. It is not usual at all especially without Matthias.

The first day she stepped into the school was the first time he met her.

She can't still believe he died. Dillion killed him after he tried to rape her.

After abducting her, after slapping and ripping her clothes off her body.

But she misses him a lot. She wished that it was all a nightmare. She can't still hate him after what he did to her.

Maybe because she doesn't have a stone as a heart, after all he has already died. What's the use of hating on the dead?

But all she has to do now is to move on without him. Probably find another friend- a female of course.

Since she started schooling, a lot of students has wanted to be friends with her, especially the males but Matthias couldn't allow it.

After agreeing to be friends with the person, at the back Matthias will do whatever to scare them off her.

Now, it's time to really find good female friends that won't bring her trouble, she had thought at school.

I'm gonna start changing for the better, I'll be more focused on my studies too. We are gonna be writing exams soon. I have to make it, she encouraged herself.

She went up straight to her room and laid down on the bed. Not up to 10 minutes passed, a knock came at the door followed by a maid getting into her room.

"Shawna, the young master sends for you, said you should meet him down at the swimming pool area" the maid said and left.

Immediately Shawna started looking for a cloth to change into.

The events of yesterday flashed back into her head.

How she had broken the cup out of carelessness.

The carelessness that was caused by disappointment.

How she had stared into his eyes for minutes and how her heart raced.

How she had stripped after his orders but he ended up ordering her out again even without touching her.

What is it this time? She thought as she put on a plain dress.

She then ran all the way to the swimming pool area

to sight him there, sitting and drinking while staring down into the water.

She stopped then breathed out severally to calm her nerves and control her fast beating heart.

After that, she started walking towards him in a slow and steady pace.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 7-8

.

© Blessing

.

(A kiss)

Writer's POV

Shawna stood before Dillion as he drank directly

from the bottle of alcohol with him.

He seems to be deep in thought, Shawna thought as she stared at Dillion. He hasn't acknowledged her presence yet.

She kept staring at him as he drank.

What could be going on on his mind? She wondered.

After waiting for about 2 minutes again, she moved forward and got a little bit closer to him.

She made to tap his shoulder but his head sprang up. In fear she moved back with speed forgetting that the pool was right behind her.

She stopped moving when she noticed her that her feet weren't balanced, as she was about to move forward again, her weight didn't really support her and she made to fall into the pool.

No! She was nearly into the pool before a hand caught hers. The hand held her firmly and pulled her up.

With the force in which she was pulled up, she almost hugged the hand's owner which happened

to be Dillion.

Her heart speed up. She thought she was gonna die just now. She doesn't even know how to swim.

Her right hand relaxed on Dillion's chest. She took her eyes up to stare at him doubtfully.

She doubted that he was the one that held her.

Her eyes met with his piercing eyes.

"When will you ever learn?" He spoke up the smell of the alcohol he was drinking went into Shawna's noserily.

It is a strong one!

She opened her mouth to talk but didn't even know what to say.

She kept staring at him and suddenly she felt her heart beat faster.

She was so close to him again. She doesn't understand how she felt exactly.

Dillion kept watching for expression like a movie and slowly his eyes flickered to her lips then back to



her eyes.

Shawna felt butterflies inside her when she noticed his eyes movement. She started feeling weird, more weird than ever.

It became worst when she noticed he was really about to kiss her. Their faces are much more closer now.

She couldn't believe it when she finally felt his lips on hers.

Her eyes grew more bigger. Her lips couldn't dare move.

She gulped down when she noticed his lips really dancing on hers. He wanted entrance so she patted her lips giving him the entrance he wanted.

His lips covered hers and he kissed her deeply for the first time ever.

\*

Ma'am Sandra who was bringing a cup of milk and cake to him stopped when she saw the awkward situation they were in.

She became surprised seeing Dillion really holding and staring at her like she was his life. Then to the kiss.

She turned back quietly, then left not wanting to stop the moment.

\*

The kiss barely lasted because Dillion got a grip of himself and stopped.

What the hell? He had questioned his own self.

Why did I do that? He frowned when he had disengaged. He went and sat back on his sit.

"Take this and leave" he took up a small package that looked like the first one he had given her before.

Shawna breathed out and collected the package from him than walked out quickly from there.

Her heart kept beating more faster. Due to her current state, she didn't even notice ma'am Sandra who was standing around there.

She ran past her up to her room. She slammed the door close and locked it, then went into the shower.

Her body has already reddened, it has become hot. She turned on the shower and stood as cold water ran through her body.

What was that? She wondered.

\*\*\*

Dillion ruffled his hair still thinking about the kiss.

I only kiss ladies I like. Why did I suddenly have the urge to kiss her? Why did I end up kissing her? Why didn't I stop myself earlier? He wondered.

He kept thinking about it until a call came into his phone.

Without looking at the caller, he picked the call and placed the phone on his ear.

"Yeah?" He said into the phone.

"Hellooo, Dillion do you still recall me?" A female voice asked.

He brought the phone down and stared at the number, he stared at it for long but couldn't recognize it. The number wasn't saved.

"I don't remember you. Speak!" He ordered.

He doesn't really interact with a lot of ladies. He wondered how this one got his number.

"It's me Viv" the caller said.

"Viv?" Dillion asked.

"Oh Vivian?" He finally remembered and rubbed his temple.

"Yesss, Dillion it's me. I have business over there. Like I'm coming over to Paris and don't have where to stay and I don't wanna stay at a hotel Dillon. Can I stay at your mansion till...you know..." She explained.

"Why can't you stay at a hotel?" Dillion asked not really concerned about her at the moment.

"Because I don't know when I'll finish with my work over there. I can't stay in a hotel, it's dangerous...I'm a lady y...."

"You can come if that's what you want. You won't stay long too" Dillon Interrupted her speech then cut the call.

**\*\*Somewhere at Angola\*\***

Vivian the lady that just finished calling Dillion smiled and stared at her two friends.

"What did he say babe?" One of them inquired.

Vivian grinned.

"He said I can come over" she squeaked and answered.

"Yes!! That's how it goes" her two friends rejoiced.

"So, how exactly do you plan on executing your plans?" One asked.

"Well, I'll just have to seduce him a bit. One thing I learnt about Dillion is that he prefers strong people to weak people. I'll show him my qualities, I'll give him a helping hand. He won't know when he'll fall for me" she smiled and said.

"Alright babe, you have to start packing now" one said.

"Yes! Wish me luck" Vivian said.

"Goodluck!!!" They both wished.

.

.

(Happy)

Writer's POV

Shawna came out from the bathroom and threw herself on the bed after wearing on her clothes.

She kept thinking, she kept thinking about the kiss. She couldn't forget it.

The way and manner he had kissed her, it didn't look like he was just trying to take pleasure from her. It looked like he was really hungry for it, he really wanted it with the way he acted.

Which is why it's very awkward. Very strange.

Her mind drifted to the reason he had called her and she turned her head and got hold of the small package also lying there on the bed.

Oh! It's another phone. He got another one for me, she thought happily as she unwrapped it.

It's the same brand.

Since the incident with Matthias she hasn't been able to touch a phone because Matthias actually collected the phone and doomed it outside in the waste bin including her designer bag.

She got another designer bag two days later but didn't get back her phone or a new one.

Then she thought that she won't be getting any one again.

She has accepted that she won't be getting another but here is another one staring at her.

She smiled and kept it aside feeling sleepy.

"I'll come for you later" she yawned and said then slept off.

4 hours later.

Shawna climbed down the stairs to go meet ma'am Sandra. She felt so hungry, she didn't eat before sleeping off.

She turned round the mansion to the kitchen side and met ma'am Sandra. She is always at that end of

the mansion.

"Ma'am" she called.

"Hey child, come over here. You haven't eaten. I sent a someone to you but got the reply that you've slept off. You are hungry now right?" Ma'am Sandra did the whole talking for her.

She smiled happily and nodded her head.

"Well, go tell marina to heat up that food inside the fridge" she instructed and shawna nodded then left to do what she was asked. She came back few minutes later and sat with Ma'am s andra.

"So, how was today? Did anything exciting or surprising happen?" Ma'am s andra asked wanting to hear her narrate the incident that led to Dillion to kissing her.

"Um.. incident?" Shawna asked then thought. Her mind flashed to the kiss but she didn't know how to even start explaining it to ma'am s andra so she decided to lie.

"No.. nothing at all" she replied touching her cheek



which has started reddening.

Ma'am Sandra of course noticed this but didn't wanna expose her.

"Shawna, come up to the dinning. Your meal is there" she heard Marina say to her.

She stood up immediately.

"I'll go for my meal now" she said to ma'am Sandra and left.

She met her meal there and bounced on it, eating hungrily not until luwis showed up.

She slowed down her pace, eating with her eyes fixed on him. She hasn't been seeing him around, neither has she been seeing Sam. Seems like they are back.

"Hi Shawna, do you miss me?" He asked and winked.

"No, where have you been?" Shawna replied him not entirely honest.

"Hmm...so you don't miss me, huh!? Well I missed you, been with the boys anyways" he answered collecting her fork from her.

She let him have it. He used the fork to cut the beef inside her plate, then he took a bit before handing the fork back to her.

She collected it and continued eating slowly.

"So, how have you been?" He asked.

"Good. What do you mean 'been with the boys'? What boys are you talking about?" Shawna asked really curious.

"Don't worry, I'm sure you'll get to see them one day" Luwis answered simply.

A cool silence ensured as Shawna took his answers and continued eating.

After a while of staring at her eat. Luwis spoke up and asked.

"Do you mind walking around the mansion with me tomorrow?" He inquired.

She took her eyes to stare at him.

She has been wanting to know every nook and cranny of the big mansion for long but she knows that Luwis can't also be seen walking around with

her.

She coughed slightly before replying him.

"Maybe some other time, not tomorrow" she answered him.

Luwis who was expecting a complete no became a bit surprised but happy at the same time.

"Okay, maybe during weekdays. I'll leave you to finish your food" he said standing up.

Shawna nodded her head. He touched her hair before disappearing giving Shawna space to breathe properly.

They all make her nervous.

Next day.

Shawna went to school as usual and returned but was met with surprises.

She met Dillion waiting for her at her front door. Like he was waiting for her.

It didn't only surprise her, it also shocked her but she tried to hide it when she stood facing him.

"Be quick, I don't have time, go dress up" he said to her staring at his wrist watch.

She went into her room after nodding, she started searching for what to wear but was aided by a maid that was probably sent to help her out.

"What is going on?" Shawna couldn't help but ask the maid who had smiles on her face. Her happiness couldn't be hidden.

"Well, today is the day the young master grants us anything. It happens once in a while, he even does things for us without asking. Everyone of us always look forward to this day" she explained smiling like she was seeing heaven.

"Okay, like it has a particular day or..."

"No! It's just happens. Whenever something good, I mean really good happens to him. He becomes like this" she explained again and Shawna nodded her head.

"So, what happened to him?" She couldn't help but ask again.

"I don't know. We don't ask but you can ask if you want. He won't penalize you since something good might have happened to him - just for today. You can behave abnormally" she giggled at the last part.

It wasn't really going down well with Shawna. She is confused even after the explanation but she decided to let it go.

She went into the shower and had a two minutes bathe. She came out and put on the cloth selected for her by the maid.

The maid helped in combing her hair, she kept smiling all the way till they were done.

Is she that happy? Shawna wondered and went to open the door in order to go to Dillion but shockingly met him still standing there.

Her eyes widened.

He has been here the whole time? She thought.

Okay, today is really a day to be happy about?

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 9-11

.

© Blessing

.

(Come closer)

Writer's POV

**\*\*Somewhere in Mexico\*\***

Dilly got a call from one of his securities, he had to rush home immediately on hearing the reason.

Like, what the f\*\*k!? Why does this bit\*h keep behaving abnormal? He had thought as he drove home angrily. It's almost time for Naomi to get back at the house from school.

He doesn't want her to meet Rita who was currently at the front of the mansion causing troubles.

In less than thirty minutes he arrived and came down from the car.

He saw Rita there with her car fighting with the securities who didn't let her in.

"Hey stop" he ordered stopping the securities from pushing her away.

"Ri..." he made to call but was met with a heavy slap. It shocked him to the bones.

In anger he made to slap her back but held himself, he has seen his son looking at him from Rita's car. Rita's mother was also inside the car.

He gulped down the anger and breathed out.

"I'll pretend that you never slapped me" he groaned lowly at her.

"Tell them to open this gates, they are all getting fired today" Rita shrieked in rage of what was happening.

"You aren't going in, you're going back to your house" Dilly groaned at her again.

"Well, that won't ever happen. Look I'm gonna stay

here with our son...." she stopped talking then went to her car. She opened the car and brought out four years old Bryan who doesn't even understand what was happening. He doesn't even know that Dilly is his supposed father.

Rita took Bryan and dropped him on the floor there.

"Are you crazy? What sort of a mother are you?"

Dilly rasped and went to lift the boy from the floor.

Rita seems to care less.

"This is where we're going to be living from now on since you don't want us in. He can start getting adapted early" Rita rolled her eyes and said less concerned.

Dilly stared at her in so much regret. Just a one night stand caused him this, he regretted that night at the club. And to top it all, he was even drunk but he knew he had s\*x with someone the following morning when he woke up.

And Rita appeared after two weeks to tell him about her pregnancy. He was so so mad at her.

As a bit\*h she is, she doesn't even know how to



prevent herself from getting pregnant. He had rejected the baby and had paid her the exact amount she asked from him. She left, only for her to come back two years later with his supposed son.

He got the shock of his life that day. He didn't even know what to do. First, after all the money she collected, she didn't abort or even leave him alone. She was like a scammer and he had so much wanted to kill her but couldn't. He just couldn't and he gave her another large amount of money only for her to come back few months ago.

He was so damn frustrated! And now she is making demands he can't fulfill.

A car stopped behind Dilly's car and his heart skipped.

He has been keeping the secret for long. He hasn't told anyone about it and he doesn't want them to find out, at least not now.

Could it be Naomi? He wondered he's eyes fixed on the car but should I say luckily for him Andrew came down from the car instead.

Dilly heaved a little sigh of relief, at least it's not his little sister who will immediately tell Dillion about it. He doesn't even know how Dillion will react to the news of him having a son.

Andrew looked confused at the whole scene he was witnessing.

"Hey, who's kid is that?" Andrew questioned coming towards Dilly.

**\*\*Back to Paris\*\***

Dillion stared at Shawna from head to her toe. He noticed how beautiful she looked.

She has always looked beautiful anyways, he just behaves as if he doesn't notice.

"Let's go" he said his eyes still on her.

Shawna gulped down nervously. Why is he staring at her like every other guy stares at her? She wondered.

Somehow, she preferred his cold glare. This one is making her so uncomfortable.

She started walking ahead of him with her body

clingy dress. Every dress in that house is either too short or too tight. There is no long free gown except her nightie, if there was, she could have gone back to change into it.

Dillion walked behind her slowly until they got to the garage. They entered a limo which had already been opened for them by his guards.

"Goodness!" Shawna exclaimed silently.

The limo is sooo mad.

She sat facing Dillion who sat across her and brought out his phone. The file he was holding didn't escape her eyes but she decided to ignore it.

The limo started and left the mansion, few minutes into the road Shawna heard Dillion's voice. He's cool, calm voice. She never expected the question but today is a different day.

He asked her.

"So, how was school today? Any new friends?"

Shawna blinked her eyes thrice before she knew what to answer him.

"School is okay. I..I haven't really gotten a close one" she answered him her eyes on her fingers.

"Hm..." She heard Dillion respond to her answer.

"Thanks..for the phone" she suddenly remembered the second phone he bought for her. She has never really thanked him for anything tho. Probably because of fear but today is a different day.

"Yeah...have you learnt how to use it?" Dillion asked his eyes on his phone.

"N..o.." she stuttered a bit bringing out the phone.

He beckoned on her to come sit beside him with his fingers. She has itated not really sure he meant it.

It was when he brought down his phone and fixed it into his pocket and then focused on her that she realized he really meant it.

She swallowed really nervous. This side of him is somehow, she thought. Probably because she has never really seen him behaving normal.

She stood up and went to sit beside him with her phone, she didn't forget to maintain a distance from

him.

Dillion collected the phone and unlocked it, he started setting the phone for her while she peeped from where she sat.

"Come closer" he mumbled his eyes on the phone. Shawna pretended not to hear him. Maybe I am hallucinating, she thought.

He raised his head up a bit to stare at her wondering why she is not moving closer to him.

"Come closer" he said again.

.

.

(Angry)

Writer's POV

\*\*Mexico\*\*

Dilly thought of what to do for a while before deciding.

He's taking the boy without his mother.

"Don't let her in" he said to the securities.

"It's a long story" he replied Andrew who was staring at him.

"Maybe I'll explain fully later but he is my son" he revealed which shocked Andrew.

"Your son?" Andrew questioned wide eyes.

Bryan - the boy heard this and lifted his head up to stare at Dilly.

"Really?" He asked.

"Yeah and you'll coming with me" Dilly shook his head and said taking him to his car.

"Hey! Hey!! Dilly what do you think you're doing?" Rita shrieked shocked at what Dilly was actually doing.

"Don't ever allow her in. She can live there if she wants" Dilly said to the securities again before getting into his car. He kept Bryan at the back sit and ignited the car engine.

"Hey! Dilly tell me you aren't serious, tell me you're joking" Rita yelled running to his car.

He drove backwards then reversed before leaving Rita who was still running after his car.

"Aren't you stopping for her? She's my mom!" Bryan said from the back seat.

"I'm sorry but I aren't stopping" he replied Bryan driving back to the Company.

"But why? Why are you two fighting?" Bryan asked really concerned.

"Don't worry kiddo. I'll make you forget her" Dilly said to him.

"But I don't want to forget her, she might not really like me but she's still my mom" Bryan cooed sadly.

"Has she been treating you badly?" Dilly looked at him and asked.

"Forget it" Bryan mumbled sadness written over his face which made Dilly really really concerned and also curious.

So, Rita that bit\*h hasn't been good to him? He thought.

Well, I'll make sure you forget her soon.

Andrew stared at the raging Rita for a while. The incident that just took place seems like a dream to him.

He went back into his car and decided to drive to his place.

Rita stood there cussing at Dilly angrily.

How could he do this to me? Well, I'm the beginning of his nightmare, if he thinks he can play this game well. I'll show him I started playing the game before he got introduced to it, she thought angrily before matching back to her car. Her mother still sat there quietly.

"Now what? I told you this was bound to happen" her mother said.

"Well, he just made me angrier. I'm going to the media house tomorrow and I'm gonna announce the news to the whole world. He is gonna regret his actions" Rita sneered.

**\*\*Paris\*\***

Shawna shifted closer to Dillion as requested but



she made sure that there was no body contact between them.

"Look into the phone" Dillion instructed and she did.

"I'm gonna explain how some of these apps work. Firstly I'm gonna be saving my number here" he said then stored his number.

Saving it with chapter later D before he went on and explained how some of the apps worked.

Shawna tried her best to concentrate but she didn't really concentrate. It was awkward - so weird.

She didn't understand what he was saying, her eyes moved to stare at his face most of the times and back to the phone.

She doesn't understand how he'll just transform, how his behavior changed and it will only be like this just for today.

"Do you understand?" She heard suddenly heard as he finally took his eyes to stare at her.

"Um...yes..yes, I understand, thanks" she stuttered her reply but hell she barely understood a word he

said.

"Really?" He asked as if in doubt.

"Ye..yes, I do" Shawna replied.

"Okay, what did I say this app is used for?" He asked pointing to a particular app there.

Shawna's heart skipped.

Instantly sweats started forming on her forehead. She doesn't know that he's gonna be doing this.

He's fixed eyes didn't leave her face, he stared at her keenly waiting for a reply which he wasn't getting. Shawna thought hard, what is that app used for?

Goodness! She looked at the app again, more closely to see instagram written beneath it.

"It's instagram an...an..." her mind flashed back to when she and Beatrice were checking out the apps in her formal phone.

Then she remembered.

"It's a social media app, you use it to connect with

people" she said and heard him chuckle - like he laughed.

Shawna's eyes widened. Did he just laugh at her?

She stared at him in surprise. He just laughed - a whole Dillion laughing at her.

It made her happy. The thought dilated her.

"You took minutes thinking about it. You didn't listen to me, did you?" He asked jokingly.

She immediately felt embarrassed, she bowed her head slightly and nodded.

He chuckled again and she raised her eyes up to stare at his face. He also stared at her and due to the way they are sited, their faces almost touched.

Recalling what had happened the last time this happened Shawna immediately removed her face and moved away from him again.

"Thanks, I'll...I will learn the rest on my own" she said.

Her head again slightly bent, she noted that he stared at her in an usual way. The way he has been staring at her since yesterday and today.

He didn't even reply her.

"Why did you move?" He suddenly asked after a long silence.

She shot her head up to reply him but didn't even know what to say.

Like he is asking her why she had moved away from him. Is this Dillion or an imposter, she wondered.

Luckily for her the guards at the steering announced their arrival.

"Sir, we are here" they announced.

The door got opened afterwards and Dillion came down first, when Shawna was coming down, he aided her by holding her hand.

It shocked her again. Like she is just getting shocked today.

Today is really different, she thought.

"Let's go" Dillion said to her walking into a very fancy restaurant. Shawna walked by his side until they got in and surprisedly for Shawna again, the restaurant was empty.

Only waitress could be sighted, no customer at all.

How strange, she thought.

She followed Dillion to a very fancy round table at the middle of the restaurant and they sat.

Three waitress came up to them immediately.

"Sir, what will you like to order?" One with blond hair asked really drooling over him.

The wealthy that reserved the whole restaurant has finally arrived and he is so young, she thought inside her head.

"Um...I'll get back to you" Dillion replied her without even sparing her a glance. He didn't see the way she had drooled but Shawna noticed.

It didn't past her notice at all. It made her feel somehow - somehow strange. The feeling is strange because she has never felt that way before but she also didn't like the feeling.

Dillion brought out his phone and called someone.

"I'm almost there Mr Mark, sorry for the delays" the person he called said into the phone.

Dillion cut the call and kept his phone aside wondering if he was to order something before the person he is expecting comes.

Maybe a champagne, he concluded and snapped his fingers for the waitress to come.

The three waitress from before rushed to their table.

"Just get us a bottle of champagne" Dillion said and spared them a glance but still didn't notice anything.

Shawna of course noticed how they behaved especially the blonde hair girl.

She didn't know when she scoffed and folded her hands angrily.

Dillion heard her and turned to look at her.

What is wrong with her? He wondered but didn't pay much attention to her frowns.

"Okay sir, we will be back with a bottle of champagne for you sir. It tastes so so great, I bet you will love it. It could be great...." the blond hair girl kept singing trying to really attract Dillion's attention and she did.

Dillion turned again, the other two waitress has already left but she continued standing close to him with wide smiles - big seductive smiles.

"You can go" Dillion simply dismissed her.

This time he didn't fail to notice her seductive talks and smiles. Something he has already been used to so it didn't even bother him well not until he caught Shawna glaring at her like there was no tomorrow.

That was when it hit him, the waitress is the reason for her frowns.

He didn't know when he chuckled at the thought that Shawna is jealous that a mere waitress was seducing him.

Well, he didn't think about it much because the door opened and the person he was waiting for entered.

A man who was in his late thirties.

Dillion stood up to exchange greetings with him, they exchanged greetings. Shawna also greeted the man and that was when the man noticed her.

"Wow! Who is this beauty you brought with you?"

The man asked sitting down not too far from Shawna.

Shawna blushed because of the compliment.

Dillion didn't answer him, he just took his sit and called back the waitress.

He ordered some dessert for himself and Shawna while the man ordered for a bottle of cocktail drink.

When the waitress left and returned with all that they have ordered, the man asked again.

"Mr Mark, I never knew you had such a beautiful sister. Her beauty is so ravishing" the man said.

Shawna found herself blushing for the second time, Dillion noticed and it made me mad. Like really angry.

"She is not my s...." he stopped himself.

"She is my cousin and she is NOT AVAILABLE" he made emphasis on not available.

The man smiled.

"That's not for you to decide. Is it true beauty?" The



man replied less concerned of the tone Dillion used in replying him. It was an angry tone of course but he didn't mind.

Dillion who already knows the man real well frowned. The man is a CEO of a very big company - a known womanizer. The thought added more to his anger.

Is he trying to get at Shawna?

"Um..." Shawna stuttered and looked at Dillion who's eyes were fixed on his dessert.

"Yes sir, it's true" Shawna replied in a very cool voice. It angered Dillion again.

Why Is she replying him so sweetly?

"Oops, my bad but after getting to know more, I promise that you'll leave that your boyfriend and come to me. You see I can give you an amount of money you...."

"Mr Johnson, we came here for business okay? Stop trying to flirt with her. I said she is NOT AVAILABLE okay? Or don't you understand the word

available? Should I spell it for you?" Dillion couldn't hold his anger in again, he snapped at the man.

It left Shawna's mouth open.

.

To be continued after comments..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 12

.

©Blessing .

.

(Dresses)

Writer's POV

\*\*Mexico\*\*

Dilly arrived the company and parked his car in the

parking lot.

He carried little Bryan out and started heading into the company. When the securities saw him, they looked at each other in surprise.

They all know their boss and what he likes. What is he doing with a boy? Who is the boy? They wondered.

The glass door at the entrance was opened for him and he walked in still carrying Bryan. Bryan kept looking around the company in awe.

Even the workers stopped to look at him, once he passes them, they start mumbling and gossiping.

Dilly expected the reaction but he doesn't really care anymore. Rita pushed him too much, it's high time he makes her realize that he can as well abandon her totally if he wants. He can get rid of her.

Dilly got to the elevator and pressed the number of the last floor, that's where the vice president and the president office is built.

The elevator took them up, immediately he got off

the elevator his eyes met with Suzan.

She had been worried because of the way he had left after the phone call. She was actually in his office talking about work with him when his phone rang and he left hurriedly. She has been expecting him to show up and now he is here but with a kid???

She stared at him as he walked up to her, he made Bryan sit on her receptionist desk.

"S...sir?" She called.

"Can you look after him for me? For two hours" Dilly requested.

"Of...of course" she replied him before taking her eyes to Bryan who was staring around.

"Yeah thanks" Dilly said before turning to go into his office.

He's reply actually surprised her, he is not the type to thank someone so easily although he has changed a lot this recent time.

Dilly opened his office door and made to go in but stopped knowing that Suzan will want to know

who's kid he is.

"He is my son" he said to her.

"Bryan, stay with her till I'm done. I'll try to finish h  
with work fast" he said to Bryan before getting in.

"Oh...oh...!" only came out from suzan's mouth as  
she stared at Bryan who also stared at her.

She forced a smile at him before carrying him and  
making him sit on her chair.

She stared at him for long wondering how and when  
Dilly got a son, then she remembered - the lady that  
had been here the other day. She must be his  
mother.

Maybe Dilly has finally accepted the mother and  
child to be with him, she thought. It made her sad  
and angry.

It tore her heart thinking about it, there is no chance  
for her now.

She sighed and squatted down to him.

"Hey! What is your name?" She asked ignoring the  
fact Dilly had already called him Bryan.

Bryan hesitated for a while before saying a word.

"Are you angry at my dad?" The question shocked her.

"Huh!"

"You look somehow, your facial look. It's as if you're angry and sad at the same time" Bryan said again.

Wow! He has been observing me? Suzie thought not knowing what to even say to the little smart boy. Her boss's son.

\*Back to Paris\*

Shawna's eyes remained widened, she doesn't really understand why he is angry.

Why will he shout at someone clearly older than him? And it's obvious that he is here for business, so they are probably business partners.

A business partner shouldn't be clearly treated this way, she thought.

Mr Johnson remained muted for a while clearly angry that Dillion had reacted that way to him.

He decided to let it go immediately, he can get her without him knowing some other time.

This is business, after business, he had concluded in his mind and then he decided to apologise.

Dillion on his own realized what he did, he shouldn't be yelling at him that way.

This particular business is what he has been trying to get for a long long time. The actual reason for his happiness was because Johnson has finally agreed to hand over the equipments he has been asking for.

He shouldn't have behaved that way!

He sighed and made to apologise, just for today. Let today continue being a happy day, he thought and made to apologise but Johnson apologized first.

"I'm sorry for that. You're clearly right, I shouldn't be doing this" he apologized to Dillion who immediately nodded.

"I'm also sorry sweetheart" he couldn't help but still admire Shawna.

Shawna nodded her head with her eyes fixed on

Dillion.

"So, the papers?" Johnson demanded.

Dillion handed over the necessary papers to him and he signed them. Dillion also signed the one Dillion brought before standing up to leave.

"You can send your workers to come get them from Monday" Johnson said extending his hand for a handshake.

Dillion also stood up and shook his hand.

"Sure" Dillion replied.

"I'll take my leave now" Johnson said then took a last look at Shawna before leaving.

Dillion sat down satisfied that he didn't ruin the business with his attitude after all.

Dillion relaxed and they ate their dessert silently.

Dillion called a waiter and he came, he handed his card to the waiter and he left. He came back and handed the card back to him.

"Let's go" Dillion said standing up.



Shawna stood up and followed him out.

They got into the limo and Dillion told the guards to drive to the nearest shopping mall.

Shawna wondered.

Shopping mall? But didn't say anything. The incident with Johnson hasn't washed away from her brain.

Why did he get so angry that that man is flirting with me?

Was he even flirting? She wondered again.

They arrived the mall an hour later. Throughout the ride Dillion didn't say a word to her. He just concentrated on his phone.

Dillion again helped Shawna in coming down from the limo and into the mall. They went to the cloth section and Shawna wondered.

He wants to buy clothes for himself?

It was when they got to the ladies side that she realized, it's not for him - Definitely. He won't wear female clothes, her mind told her.

Dillion stared at the rolls of clothes for a while before ordering for them all.

Okay, what is he doing? Shawna wondered still lost.

The waiters didn't waste time, they started packing up all the clothes in that particular row.

They stole glances at Dillion as they did that.

"Gosh, she is really lucky" one whispered to her partner and Shawna happened to hear it.

And it dawned on her. He is getting those clothes for her? Only her? Her eyes widened at the thought.

The dresses are all her size, she is sure a lot of them will fit her.

She kept looking at Dillion until he spoke up.

"What?" He asked.

Shawna swallowed.

"Are those dresses for me?" She inquired but wished she hadn't asked when he didn't reply her for 2 straight minutes. It was like he was going back to his usual self.

"Is that a question?" He scoffed and turned to fully face her.

"If they aren't for you then who else? Who could possibly own them?" He asked then turned away from her.

"Perhaps ma'am Sandra?" He scoffed again.

Shawna lowered her head and found herself smiling. He made it look like it was a stupid question.

But come to think of it, he is really getting all those dress just for her?..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 13-15

.

© Blessing .

.

( A Kiss )

Writer's POV

\*Mexico\*

Back inside his office, Dilly sat down then brought out his phone and dialed someone's line.

"Hello" a voice came out from the other end of the phone.

"Yeah Luke, I need you to do a lot of things for me real quick. Firstly, search for a nanny, secondly you to tell the maids to arrange that room opposite mine than thirdly search up for an elementary school around the quarters" Dilly said into the phone.

"A nanny, the room and a school?" The voice asked to be sure.

"Yeah, do that fast. About payment, the nanny will be paid handsomely. Just be fast with this, make sure you finish the task in less than 3 hours" Dilly said.

"Okay, but how should the room be?" The voice

asked.

"Well, just have them arrange it for now. Later, I'll have to get someone to really design the room properly" Dillion answered.

"Okay sir, I'll go now" the voice said.

Then the line went dead.

Dilly dropped his phone on top of his table then started searching for his tablet.

His mind is telling him that it might be useful to Bryan.

He opened up the drawers attached to his desk in hope to see the tablet, he kept searching and searching until he found it. Then he stood up hurriedly and walked to the door in order to hand the tablet over to Bryan.

Outside the office.

Bryan kept staring at Venessa for answers which weren't going to come.

"Let's just forget it okay?" Venessa thought for a while then decided to wave it aside.

Bryan being the kind of kid he is didn't disturb again. He just took his attention elsewhere, he started staring around. Then he stood up from the sit and started heading to the elevator side.

Venessa kept staring at him as he walked.

"Where do you wanna go Bryan?" She whispered so as not to disturb her boss.

Bryan turn to look at her, then he looked away and concentrated his attention on the elevator.

"Where?" Venessa asked going to meet him.

Bryan kept quite, he just stared at the elevator. He is not tall enough, he could he opened it.

Venessa opened up the elevator and Bryan wasted no time in running in.

"Where?" Venessa asked for the third time kind of worried. Dilly had asked her to look after him which meant that he trusted her enough.

She doesn't wanna disappoint him at all by taking Bryan anywhere and something happens to him.

"Let's just head down, I wanna look around" Bryan

finally answered her.

Venessa sighed and stepped into the elevator.

"We aren't stepping out of the company, okay? We will just look around for few minutes" Venessa looked down at Bryan who was trying to press one of the bottles that will lead them to any floor if pressed but his hand couldn't reach it.

Venessa saw this and helped Bryan in pressing the bottle of the last floor.

The elevator closed up just when Dilly was coming out from his office.

He met an empty room.

Where are they? He wondered.

**\*\*Paris\*\***

After getting her a lot of clothes, they left together. They got outside and entered the opened limo.

Shawna couldn't hide her happiness, she kept on smiling and smiling like a crazed person.

Dillion noticed this but pretended not to notice it.

There was still time, he doesn't just wanna head home now.

He's kind of sick of the house today, the world revolves around him there afterall.

But he thought about it, he can always go out next time and secondly he is expecting a visitor which happens to be vivian.

"J ust head back home" he said to his guards and driver. They started the engine then left for the mansion.

The few hours they spent was spent in silence, it was as if they both didn't know what to say to each other so they decided to be quit.

Being quit has always been Dillion's character but he really wanted to start up a conversation, even if it's last for 10 minutes but he didn't know what to say.

And being who he is again, he hates mistake. So he also doesn't wanna start up a meaningless conversation so he remained muted till they got to the mansion.



And also Shawna, she really wanted to thank him for the clothes but strangely didn't know how to start.

Today is different Shawna, she had reminded herself but then again reminded herself of the characters he showed that are awkward so she kept mute until they got to the mansion.

They got down from the limo which was parked in the garage.

Dillion came down first and wanted to leave but Shawna found herself holding onto him.

He stopped and helped her down, when he wanted to leave again. She still held onto him.

He then turned to face her knowing fully well she wanted something, needed something.

"What is it?" He asked his eyes fixed on her.

"Um..." Shawna started her gaze on the floor.

"I just wanna thank you for the meal and the clothes" she thanked then folded her lips. She was just too shy even to look him in the eyes.

Hold on, she isn't supposed to originally look him in

the eyes.

"Look at me" Dillion hushed.

She slowly looked up at him.

"When you're thanking someone, you should at least look the person in the eyes. I need to see your sincerity" Dillion said.

Shawna couldn't help but feel heated as their eyes stayed glued to each other.

"You're welcome" he said after a long time. He then took his hands up to her head and brought it closer, he planted a kiss on her forehead then looked down at her eyes, her lips. The urge to kiss her hit him and he didn't resist it, he bent down slowly and placed his lips on hers. He's lips caress her shut lips for a while before he finally gained entrance to her mouth, he kissed her slowly, slowly as if that was where he was gonna die.

Shawna who really wasn't expecting the kiss tried to behave herself as he kissed her slowly.

Her heart beat kept increasing. The taste of his lips,

they tasted like the champagne he finished drinking hours ago.

But the slow kiss was cut short by a call.

He stopped, brought out his phone to see the caller - Vivian.

.

.

(Who is he?)

Writer's POV

\*Mexico\*

Dilly walked up to the table and then he dropped the tablet there.

I wonder where they went to, he thought out again before going back in to finish up the office work waiting for him.

\*Two hours later\*

He finished with all the works he had then arranged his works properly before leaving his office. He got out to see that Suzan has returned together with

Bryan. Bryan was sitting beside her with the tablet he dropped off for him with him.

Suzan lifted her head up to look at Dilly, she stood up immediately.

"You can go home now" Dilly said to Suzan.

"Yes sir" Suzan replied her gaze fixed on him.

"Let's go, Bryan" he said to Bryan avoiding Suzan's eyes.

Bryan stood up from where he was sited then walked up to Dilly. Dilly held his hand and started leading him to the elevator.

"Bye Suzan" Bryan turned and waved at Suzan who waved back at him.

Dilly got into the elevator and pressed the button of the last floor. The elevator closed up and started moving down.

Suzan's mood changed instantly. She has really lost him.

Before he doesn't really avoid her gaze. Maybe he is going to get married to Bryan's mother now, she

thought then started parking up.

Dilly got out to the garage, he got into the car he came with together with Bryan then he drove to a nearby shopping mall to get Bryan some clothes. After buying him clothes, he put a call to Andrew asking him to come over.

An hour later.

Dilly arrived home and as accepted, Rita was gone. He smirked at the thought before driving in and parking in the parking lot.

He came down with Bryan and walked into the house. Naomi was standing at the entrance with her arms at akimbo.

She has seen Rita before Rita left and she couldn't wait to know the reason why a woman was looking for Dilly.

But she got a shock when she saw Dilly with Bryan. She bent down a little to look at Bryan.

"Hmm. Who is he?" She asked with a crumbled look.

"Get out of my way" Dilly hushed instead and

walked in with Bryan.

Bryan on getting in was fascinated by the beauty of the sitting room. He kept his eyes up and could have fallen if not for the fact that Dilly was holding him tight.

Dilly climbed the stairs with Bryan and got to the room he asked to be arranged.

He opened the door and walked in with Bryan.

"This is gonna be your room for now kiddo" he squatted to Bryan's height and said.

"So I aren't gonna be leaving with mom from now on? Is that it?" Bryan asked to be sure.

"Yes" Dilly answered him and he nodded then climbed on top of the big bed there.

"So, this is gonna be my bed too?" Bryan asked and Dilly smiled. He was starting to like the boy more bit by bit.

Not that he hated him too but he just wasn't ready for a child. No, he wasn't.

"Yes, everything here and more is gonna be yours.

The room facing yours is my room, so if you need anything, come over, okay? I'll leave you now" Dilly said then turned to leave.

"Thanks " he heard Bryan say from behind.

He turned and looked at him.

"Why do you say that?" Dilly asked.

"For accepting me" Bryan replied. Dilly felt a sting in his heart when he heard that but he just nodded then left closing the door behind him.

Immediately he got out, he saw Naomi there looking like a ghost.

"Who is he? I ask again Dilly" Naomi asked trying to sound as hard and cold as she can.

Dilly took his hand to her hair, he held her head and turned her over.

"Why don't you go mind your studies for now?" He said simply before entering his room.

A knock came at his door and he opened the door, a maid was standing there.

"Sir Andrew is here" the maid announced.

"Tell him to come up to my room and...the car I came back with, take all the stuff in it to the room opposite mine" he instructed.

"Yes sir" the maid replied before leaving.

Naomi on her own kept standing outside until she couldn't. She opened up Bryan's room and entered, determined to find out who he is.

*\*Paris\**

Vivian had told Dillion to come pick her up at the airport because she just arrived. He agreed to personally pick her up because he needed to get away from Shawna.

What he just did, he wasn't really understanding it. He wasn't understanding the reason for his actions. So, he just needed a distraction from her.

He moved away from her, fixed his phone into his pocket.

"You should go in" he said simply before leaving her.

Shawna stood at the same point somehow



confused. Why is his reaction strange? She wondered.

Perhaps he kissed me mistakenly and was disgusted by that? She wondered.

No! That can't be the case, he is probably embarrassed or shy, shawna concluded in her mind before jogging into the sitting room happily.

It's already getting dark tho, I wonder where he is off too, she wondered again.

He can take care of himself, she thought pushing the thought off his mind before climbing the stairs to her room.

Later, she's coming down to tell ma'am sandra everything that happened.

Unknown's POV

"We have finally found out the beast that did this to matthias and the others, we aren't gonna spare him. I can't even believe I never suspected it to be him. Tomorrow we'll set a trap for him and he will surely fall into the trap" the boss said and the rest of us

nodded in agreement.

TBC...

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 16-17

.

© Blessing .

.

(Who is she?)

Writer's POV

Few hours back to when Dillion kissed Shawna.

Luwis and Sam happened to be in one of the cars inside the garage.

Luwis had originally made to open the car and come down but stopped when he saw Dillion place his lips on Shawna's forehead. He stopped moving

immediately, his eyes fixed on them both.

And then Dillion kissed Shawna on her lips. His hands behind her, one at the back of her head and one at her waist side.

The incident surprised and at the same time angered Luwis.

"Oh my gosh! Did you see that?" Sam whispered touching Luwis and pointing to Dillion.

"Oh my!" Sam gasped again seeing how deep and slow the kiss is going. He was sure that he's boss was really enjoying himself but with some feelings attached.

Luwis kept watching. He felt so jealous and anger burnt inside of him.

Sam kept tugging Luwis but luwis didn't move.

Sam then turned to look at Luwis. He could see anger in his eyes, then he remembered that Luwis actually has feelings for Shawna. He has forgotten about that in a while.

"Okay, I'll just leave you be" Sam said and got off

the car.

By then Dillion already left and Shawna was also getting into the house.

The thought remained in Luwis mind. He knows he can't fight for Shawna against his boss and it looked like there was something else in him when he kissed Shawna.

But he could use other tricky ways to get her and if it doesn't work. Well I have no other option, he thought out loud.

"I'll take her by force."

\*\*

Few minutes before Dillion arrived at the mansion with Vivian.

Shawna sat happily with Ma'am Sandra narrating the whole tale of her outing with Dillion. She couldn't find other maids other than Beatrice, like all the maids has disappeared.

She had asked where they were and she was told that they all took a leave. It had surprised Shawna

but she remembered, no wonder that maid from earlier was so happy.

"So, he really spoke to his client that way because the man was actually trying to flirt with you?"

Ma'am Sandra asked her to be sure.

"Yes, he got so angered. I am sure of it" Shawna replied and then ma'am Sandra nodded in deep thoughts.

"That's another development then I guess" ma'am Sandra mumbled.

"What? What did you say?" Shawna asked but the sound of car hones couldn't let her wait.

"It must be him, today hasn't ended, has it?" She said excitedly standing up on her feet and then rushing outside to the entrance, she remembered the kiss.

Her cheeks flushed for some unknown reason to her.

She stood there waiting for him to show up and he finally did.

With wide smiles on her face, she wanted to say something but the person walking closely behind him made her smiles disappear instantly.

Who is she? She wondered.

Dillion didn't notice her until he got to the entrance and was about to get in but Vivian noticed the girl who's face stopped smiling on seeing her.

Vivian also wondered.

Who is she?

Dillion on his own was hoping he wouldn't see Shawna until the next day but there she is.

He stopped facing her.

Shawna's gaze fell to the floor as all the happiness she felt suddenly vanished from her system.

She doesn't know why but she felt bad about the lady beside Dillion who was staring at her.

The lady looked so so beautiful and also classy.

This can't be his sister? No, she doesn't look like one. She thought.

Then can she be his cousin? I don't think so either.

Then perhaps, his girlfriend? At the thought she raised her head up quickly and stared past Dillion to Vivian.

Dillion on noticing Shawna's eyes on Vivian explained.

"She's a guest, she will be staying here for a few days" Dillion said not really knowing why he explained.

The real Dillion doesn't owe a soul an explanation.

He thought about the reason he even explained to her and then shook his head.

This madness I'm developing has to stop, he thought and walked past her inside.

Vivian glared at Shawna. She was tall, almost Dillion's height.

Shawna just looked up at Vivian without uttering a word. She turned and entered back into the house going to meet Ma'am Sandra to ask her about Dillion's visitor but on her way to the kitchen she

bumped into Luwis.

.

.

(Fighting club)

Writer's POV

"Hey" said luwis as he stood facing Shawna.

"Hey" Shawna replied him.

"Where have you been?" Asked Luwis wanting to hear what Shawna was gonna reply him.

"I've been out with the young master, he took me out" Shawna answered not seeing any reason to lie to him.

Then an idea came into her head. Luwis might know this guest that just arrived.

"Um...Luwis?" She inched her nape and called.

"Yeah, what is it?" He replied.

"Do you...." she paused.

"Do you know that lady with your boss?" She asked



not wanting him to suspect anything.

"Which lady?" Luwis asked not sure he saw any lady.

"With long dark hair, she's also tall. The young master actually says she's gonna be staying with us for a while" Shawna explained.

"Oh really?" Luwis brows joined together as he asked.

"Yeah" Shawna replied.

"Then let's go to the dinning, after seeing her. I might be able to tell you who she is that's if I know her" Luwis said holding Shawna's arm.

Shawna bite her lower lip in and followed him not knowing what else to do.

They got to the dinning and sat down waiting for the time Dillion is probably gonna ask vivian down to dinner. As a visitor, it's expected anyways.

They didn't have to wait for long before Dillion showed up with Vivian. They were obviously discussing and laughing on their way to the dinning.

Shawna bite her lip in and folded her hands. She

looked away from their direction, they took a sit and Luwis stood up then left. Leaving her alone with Vivian who spared her a few glances and Dillion who looked like he was never gonna look her way. He just focused his eyes elsewhere totally ignoring her.

"Um...Dillion?" Vivian called leaning closer to him.

"Yes?" Dillion answered his eyes not on her either.

"Who is she? I know she's not your sister but I've been curious. Who is she?" Vivian asked truly curious.

Dillion finally looked at Shawna for the first time since he arrived but it was for only few seconds.

"She...she's someone..." he paused not really knowing how to introduce her.

"She lives her, that's all you need to know" the thought came into his mind and he quickly said it like that and when she wanted to speak about it again he dismissed it with the wave of his hand.

Dillion knows he can't tell vivian. Oh she's a gift to

me by my brother, in other words. She's my property.

Dillion knows this about Vivian, he knows she's choosy and will tend to pick on whoever she doesn't like.

His mind flashed back to the time he got to know her.

It was a club, a fighting club he usually goes to train. He met her there, she could always beg him to train with her and he had had few rounds together with her.

His mind came back to the present world when he heard sounds of plate.

The only maid there which was Beatrice was setting their food.

Shawna on her own watched Dillion and his visitor closely without making it obvious.

Lewis returned and few minutes later Dillion left for his room followed by the guest leaving her again with Lewis again.

"So, who is she?" She couldn't help but ask again.

"Well, her name is Vivian. The boss met her in...one of the fighting clubs he goes to train back in high school. I'm not close with her, I don't like her" Luwis explained to Shawna.

"Fighting club?" Shawna asked her face squeezed.

"Yeah, I bet she's from a rich home from all her dresses and all. We have never spoken properly before" Luwis explained further.

"Is she close with him?" Shawna asked to be sure.

"I don't know, why do you ask?" Luwis asked not wanting to believe the reason she's asking all this is because she's jealous.

"I just wanna know, so I'll know if I should get along with..."

"Don't get along with her" Luwis interrupted her and she nodded and then mouthed an "okay".

She doesn't really like the guest anyways.

**\*\*Fast forward\*\***

Next day.

Shawna got prepared to go to school, she walked down the stairs and got close to the entrance to see Dillion and vivian standing at the entrance together with sport clothes on.

\*\*

Few minutes earlier on Dillion's side.

He got up early, put on his training clothes. He decided to train today because of the thoughts that filled his mind, mostly thought of Shawna. He was gonna find a way to get whatever he is developing in his heart for her to melt.

He doesn't want the feeling at all.

All set ready to go, he opened the door to see Vivian standing there with two bottles of water also in her training clothes.

"Morning, figured out I'd join you for training" Vivian smiled and said.

"No! No! I really wanna be alone" Dillion replied not really wanting anyone with him.

"No please, it's better if you have a partner" vivian

insisted handing over one of the bottled water to him.

He collected the water and walked pass her going down, she smiled and followed.

They got to the entrance and Dillion stopped, thinking about the real training he needs right now.

Then he's mind answered him. Since he has Vivian as a partner he could go for boxing.

He turned and looked at Vivian who was waiting patiently for him and said.

"Boxing, I think we'll start from there" Dillion said and started heading towards the training room he built for himself around the mansion.

\*\*

Shawna watched as Dillion and Vivian head to the side she has never been to before. Why is he taking her? She wondered and started following them.

Dillion and Vivian got to one of the training rooms and then stopped.

Vivian was overwhelmed that she is going to be

training with Dillion again. She really missed those days.

She dropped her water, alongside Dillion's at a corner and they both got set.

Shawna stood outside the room watching them, forgetting that she has to go to school.

Then they started training - fighting.

Vivian was the one facing the entrance and her eyes caught Shawna outside with a look that resembles anger.

Hmm, lemme find out who she really is. She might be an opponent, vivian thought and then purposely let Dillion hit her.

She fell down on the floor and Dillion thinking he was really at fault bent down to help her.

"I'm sorry, I shouldn't have brought you with me" Dillion apologized. It shocked Vivian.

He apologized? She thought and immediately used that opportunity to hug him. It was an easy thing considering their position.

Shawna on seeing this didn't even understand her she felt, she just turned and left there hurriedly.

On seeing her reaction, a smile crept up Vivian's face. Gat ya!

.

To be continued..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 18-20

.

© Blessing .

.

(Set up)

Writer's POV

\*Mexico\*



"Bryan you'll have to stay at home today and luckily for you, I'll be taking today off too. By tomorrow you will resume school" Dilly said to Bryan as they both stayed seated in the dining room.

"So, I even have to change school?" Bryan asked not sounding too happy.

"Yeah, you have to. I don't want your mom talking to you over there" Dilly replied and Bryan nodded forcing a slice of bread into his mouth.

Meanwhile Naomi dressed up for school and came down to the sitting room about to go to the dining to have her breakfast but stopped when she saw the news.

She went closer to the television and increased the volume.

A lady was there talking, talking about her family's company, she listened and continued listening until she talked about having a son with the vice president which is Dilly.

Huh, what is she saying? Naomi wondered not really understanding where the lady was actually

heading to.

Back to the dining room, Dilly got a phone call from Andrew. He stood up and left leaving only Bryan there.

After listening and watching the television for a while she decided to go ask Dilly what that lady was really saying. She got to the dining to see just Bryan there.

"Hey! Where is my brother?" Naomi asked rudely.

Bryan did as if he didn't hear her, he just continued with his breakfast.

"Wait, why are you ignoring me? Do you realize that I'm older than you?" Naomi frowned.

Bryan looked at her and did as if he wanted to reply her but he only rolled his eyes and got down from his sit. It angered Naomi more.

"Hey you brat" Naomi stood up from his sit and made to attack Bryan but Bryan started running. Naomi kept chasing him around the dining but couldn't get him.

"I'm going to really kill you once I get you" Naomi screamed, almost screaming out her lungs.

"Hey, will you stop shouting?" Dilly came back to the dinning and took his sit.

Naomi stopped chasing Bryan and also took her sit, recalling that she has to ask him an important thing.

Bryan also sat back beside Dilly.

"Dilly, did you see the news? There was a lady saying some things about having a kid for you...."

Dilly knowing where she was heading to stopped her.

"Yes" he answered.

Andrew had called to tell her about the news. Rita really went to the media house to broadcast nonsense and now reporters must have flooded the company. The news is gonna be on everyone's lips soon, he is sure of that.

"Yes?" Naomi asked.

"Yes, I don't know what that lady really said but um..we have a kid together" Dilly replied and Naomi

gasped. Her eyes fell on Bryan.

"Is he...is he the one?" She asked in shock.

"Yes" Dilly replied.

Naomi took her full gaze to Bryan, she kept staring at him for a very long time which actually disturbed Bryan.

"You can stop staring at me. I know am handsome okay?" Bryan said without looking at her.

Naomi gasped.

Dilly chuckled.

"You...!" She pointed at him again and swallowed what she wanted to say down her throat.

She is really gonna teach him a lot of lessons since they are surely gonna be leaving under the same roof. But now she has to inform Dillion, she is so sure that he doesn't know.

Another call came into Dilly's phone and he got up.

"Naomi you aren't going anywhere until this issue might have gone down, I want you to stay with

Bryan. I have to go out now and will be back soon"  
Dilly said leaving the Dinning.

Naomi smiled evilely, she is gonna deal with Bryan today.

Bryan noticed her smile and quickly got off the chair, he made to run away but this time, Naomi was faster, she got him and started tickling him all over. Not giving him a space.

**\*\*Paris\*\***

Shawna left for school immediately she got away from the training room. She didn't even understand how she felt seeing them like that but she knows that she isn't supposed to really feel that way.

Hours later.

Dillion got a call from Naomi.

"Yeah" he picked the call and placed the phone on his left ear.

"Dillion you don't even remember that I exit anymore, you don't call. Am always the one calling, that's not how brothers treat their sister, you treat me like am

just...."

"Just head to the point Naomi, I've got no time to listen to tantrums" Dillion cut her off rubbing his forehead.

"Well..okay" Naomi replied.

"Dilly has a son, just wanted to inform you of that" Naomi said.

"What do you mean by Dilly has a son? Is that an information or what exactly?" Dillion hushed.

"Well, I guess he'll explain it to you himself but the boy is currently here in the quarters, the news is all over Mexico. The boy is handsome too but he is very arrogant, very rude and mostly snobbish" Naomi complemented and then complained.

Dillion sighed getting tired of whatever nonsense Naomi was saying.

"Look, I'll call you back when I'm ready to listen" Dillion said then cut the call.

He dropped the phone and pulled out a drawer from his table. He took out a key from there and closed it

back.

He had gotten a call 20 minutes ago probably from one of his boys, he wasn't really sure. He has a lot of them and doesn't know them all by name tho he knows all their faces.

He got out of his room and on his way down, he met Vivian on the staircase.

"Oh, where are you heading to?" Vivian asked wanting to follow him.

"Just somewhere" he answered and walked past her to the garage. He opened a luxury car and got in, Vivian who he didn't know followed him out opened the other side of the car and got in as he was about to ignite the engine. He turned to look at her.

"What are you doing?" He questioned.

"Well...I haven't really been out in a while and...." she was still saying when the gate opened and a car drove in. Shawna came down from the car and seeing the position of the luxury car, she looked into the car, she wasn't expecting to see anyone particularly but she saw Dillion and then Vivian.

"Hey, will you get that car out of the way?" She heard Dillion yell at the driver that drove her in.

Dillion wasn't really looking at her.

She then summoned up courage and did the unthinkable. She went to the car Dillion was trying to drive out with, she opened the back door and then got in.

Dillion immediately looked at her.

Vivian also looked at her.

"What - are- you- doing?" Dillion asked counting his words.

Shawna who didn't really have an explanation to why she got into the car remained quite. Maybe she doesn't wanna leave the two of them alone. Maybe she wants to find out where they are going.

"Maybe she also wanna tag along" Vivian was the one who replied for her.

Dillion thought to himself. He has changed and it's affecting him.

He sighed and drove out of the mansion to the



location he was given when he got a call.

Tho he wasn't also really sure. He had called one of his boys - Jay to confirm the location the other boy has given to him.

He got to the location after about 1 hour and stopped. Throughout the ride he just concentrated on the roads ignoring the two people with him, hell he doesn't want them with him. Especially not Shawna.

He came down from the car and looked around the place that seems deserted and strange.

His phone started ringing and he turned to take his phone back from the car because he left it inside, vivian was also trying to get the phone for him so it made their hands touched, Dillion withdrew his hand with speed, the speed shocked Vivian. It was as if her hand was an electric and couldn't be touched.

"I gat it" Dillion said with a straight face.

Vivian left the phone in somewhat anger of what he did.

Dillion took the phone and then turned back to pick the call but was met with a guy standing there.

It was a guy he hasn't seen before.

Dillion dropped the call and made to ask him who he was but the guy who knew what he was doing brought out a hanky and released the content of the hanky in the air, the content spread fast like a gas.

"What the....!?! Who the f\*\*k are you?" Dillion asked as he mistakenly sniffed in the gasly content.

It started making his eye lid heavy but that didn't stop him from grabbing hold of the guy who was about to run away.

He turned him towards the car and punched him real well that he's nose started bleeding. The boy refused talking but only stayed there letting Dillion deal with him. Dillion angrily punched him until he passed out.

When he passed out that was when Dillion realized it, he shouldn't have left that place so he will stop sniffing in the gas.

He coughed and only coughed out blood.

Ah f\*\*k! It's a set up, he's mind told him.

Then he turned and looked into the car to see that Vivian and Shawna has already passed out. They must have also sniffed in the powered content.

He took out his phone again and just dialed any number.

The person who he happened to dial his number happened to be Luwis

"Hello? Boss?" Dillion heard but couldn't even speak.

It felt like he was getting choked every time he opened his mouth to talk, the phone dropped from his shaky hands.

He managed to keep his eyes open but couldn't keep them open any longer. He also fainted.

Somewhere far from there in an underground house.

Luwis kept staring at his phone.

Why isn't he saying anything? He wondered.

"Hello? I can hear you" Luwis said into the phone for

the hundredth times.

"Hey, can you stop shouting?" Jay one of Dillion's boys snapped at Luwis who kept shouting.

The manner in which Jay had asked him to stop shouting annoyed him a lot.

He dropped the call and stood up.

"Hey, you don't tell me to what to do next time okay?" Luwis snapped back.

"Woah, look at him tryna bite back?" Jay mocked.

The place they were is a very hidden place, they were much there.

"Will you guys stop this nonsense? I thought the boss asked you to check out a location for him?" Sam tried making them stop.

"Yeah, he did but I didn't shout to let everyone know that the boss is giving me an assignment. Just because the boss called you, you are trying to let everyone know that" Jay responded referring to Luwis in the last part.

"You c\*cksuck\*r" Luwis cussed getting more angry

at him.

"Yeah it's true. The boss only favors you because you're pitiful" one sitting beside Jay half yelled and some of them agreed.

Jay laughed.

"It's true, he's life is really pitiful. An orphan who's granny also..." Jay was still mocking Luwis when luwis punched him hard on his face.

"You don't insult me, okay?" Luwis growled.

Jay touched his hurting cheek and turned to look at Luwis who was ready for a fight.

"I have a job to do for now, I have to check out the location the boss asked me to check out or I swear you could have been lying dead by now. But notwithstanding, I'll still deal with you when I get back\* Jay thundered and left.

"Well, I'll be waiting for you as well" Luwis shouted after him.

.

.

(Problems)

Writer's POV

"Guys!! There is a problem" Jay after checking out the location ran back to the others to inform them of what he found out.

"What is it?" One by the name Rockie asked.

"Well, I found boss's phone on the floor. The exact place I found it, there were foot steps there, and it looked like em..a car also parked there" he said.

"What??" Some shrieked becoming at alert.

"You were supposed to check out that location first" Sam said getting up on his feet.

"Yeah, but he was here picking up a fight with me" Luwis groaned.

Jay ignored their comments and continued.

"But I check around and only sighted ...is it an abandoned warehouse or what was that building? Well I think if they are holding him then it must be there cause that's the only building around."

"We need to move now then" Sam said moving to the door.

Luwis remained sited there while some were trying to move.

"Hey Luwis, aren't you coming or what?" Sam stopped to call him.

"Well, not everyone can go. People going should not be more than four, I'm sure the boss is handling whatever situation, he is not weak" Luwis said.

"Well yeah, not everyone can go. But you have to go, come on get up" Sam said going back to pull him up.

Far from that location.

In a kind of dark room two boys were inside the room looking at Vivian who was tied to an iron chair.

She opened her eyes and winched a little.

"What happened?" She mumbled then recalled the guy that had spread some whitish substance into the air, then Dillion had grabbed him but she has already sniffed in the substance which made her loss control of herself and she slept off.

"Hey, she's waking up" she heard then lifted her head up to see the two guys there.

"Can you see us?" One of the boys asked going closer to her.

"Who are you?" Vivian asked him.

"I'm just your captor" he replied and chuckled.

"Where is Dillion?" She asked.

"Um...he is in a much worst situation than you" the guy replied and laughed with the other one.

"Loss the ropes, my hands are hurting" Vivian said.

They both laughed.

"Really? And why should we do that?" One asked.

"Because I'm just a lady, are you afraid of a lady?" She scoffed.

"Don't tell me you are."

They both looked at each other.

"We aren't but we are just being careful" one replied.

"Being careful that a lady might end up killing you



both?" She scoffed again.

"There are others outside, we aren't afraid of you" one said.

"Then loss me" Vivian insisted.

The both of them looked at each other and then decided to loss her.

One went behind her and loos en her ropes.

"If you try to move,I'll pull the trigger and your brain will scatter all over this place" the other said pointing his gun at her.

"Nope, you won't be doing that" Vivian said stretching her body.

In another room.

Dillion opened his eyes, sniffed and then coughed.

"He is waking up" the boys in the room with him said standing up from where they sat.

Dillion tried to move but he realized that he was tied to an iron chair.

"Hey, pour a bucket of water on him" he heard one

voice say.

In minutes he felt his whole body wet.

"Are you sober yet?" One asked moving closer to him.

"No I'm not, I need another bucket of water" Dillon replied and they poured another bucket on him.

"Oh f\*\*k you all\_ he cussed silently.

"Is that enough?" They teased.

"No, it's not enough" Dillion replied and they poured another bucket on him.

It continued that way until the big drum they were getting the water from became also dried up.

"I need the last one" Dillion said knowing what he was doing.

They laughed amongst themselves and stood him up from the iron chair then walked him to the drum and fixed his head inside the drum.

"I'm sober now" Dillion said and forcefully pulled his head out from the drum.

He got hold of one of the guys holding him from behind and purposely bent his arms.

The guy got anger as expected and kicked him so hard, he staggered back but didn't fall.

"Yeah? You're strong huh!?" The guy asked moving closer to him to kick him again.

Dillion used that opportunity to start loosening the ropes used to tie his hands behind.

The guy came at him and kicked him hard on the tummy again. Dillion fell on the floor and grabbed the knife he had sighted earlier on the floor, it was among other torture tools there.

He cut the ropes but still pretended that his hands were still tied. That particular guy came at him again and lifted him up forcefully from the floor, he made to punch him but felt something piercing into his tummy.

The guy looked down at his stomach to find a knife inside.

"Goodbye" Dillion whispered to him and then pulled

out the gun tucked inside the guy's pocket.

He shot at a guy at one end of the room then another.

One made to shot him but the used the guy that he has already stabbed to guard himself.

The guy dropped down dead on the floor and Dillion hid himself behind the big drum.

They were still five more guys in the room that aren't down yet.

He waited behind the drum for long before coming out again and shooting down one.

Two left, he said to himself.

One shot at the drum he was hiding at making Dillion stand up.

He dogged an incoming bullet again and shot down the remaining two.

He got to the door and opened it to find two other guys outside there pointing their guns towards him.

Far away from there.

Shawna felt someone looking at her, she forced her eyes open and sat up on a bed.

There was a man there staring at her, the man had a lot of boys with him. Up to twenty and they were all in the room with him.

Shawna shifted backwards on the bed fearfully. She doesn't even understand how she got there.

"Who...who are you?" She asked with a shaky voice.

"I am Matthias father, the guy that used to be your friend" the man replied and Shawna gasped.

"Oh goodness!"

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 21-23

.

© Blessing .

.

(Escaping 1)

Writer's POV

"So look here, I'm gonna be asking you a lot of easy questions and I need you to reply them as quick as they come" Matthias father said his eyes settled on the terrified Shawna.

"First, Mark Dillion is the one that killed Matthias, I am right?" He asked.

Shawna gulped down hard when she heard this question, she took her eyes down unable to answer it.

'Look here young lady. I know your history with him. I know that you're just a mere property to him, so there should be no reason for you to protect him whatsoever" Matthias father said in a very hard tone.

"I don't...I don't remember" Shawna replied him.

"Matthias drugged me, when I woke up I found myself already out of the place he took me to. I

don't know anything" she lied.

Matthias father shook his head and Shawna lifted her eyes to stare at him.

I hope he believes me, she thought.

"Okay, I'll take it that you're telling the truth. That aside, what business does that boy really do?" He replied then asked.

What should I tell him? Shawna wondered.

"Um...he..he runs a company" Shawna replied.

"What sort of company? What do they produce there?" Matthias father asked on.

"I think...it's a communication company, I don't know I'm just assuming" Shawna replied really trying her best to hide a little bit of her fears.

"Okay, let's leave that aside. I heard he just signed a contract with a weaponry company, what is he planning to do after getting the weapons he purchased?" He asked.

"I don't know" Shawna replied.

"Look young lady, I don't need that answer right now. What I need is your full cooperation, I need you to cooperate before he gets here cause I know he will soon be here" he said.

"He will soon be here? What do you mean by that?" Shawna asked confused.

She thought they were all in this together, does it mean that she was the only one taken or what? She wondered.

"Bring that iron" Matthias father demanded.

A guy appeared with one pressing iron that is very hot.

"I know you have been lying, one more lie I'm gonna instruct them to burn your skin. Starting from your face" Matthias father said and shawna's eyes widened as she stared at the hot iron.

Far from there.

Vivian got out of the room she was kept in after killing the two guys with her.

They are really foolish to have loosened my ropes.



What do they actually take me for? She thought as she walked out but bumped into one of the guys.

The guy made to shot at her but she was quick to jump at him making his gun fall down, they both started struggling on the floor to get hold of the gun first.

Dillion who went out after successfully getting rid of the two guys he met early came back in when he started hearing some struggling sounds at one end of the house that looked uncompleted.

He followed the sound and met vivian and the guy, the guy had almost gotten the gun but Dillion shot him on his leg.

The guy winched and grabbed his leg.

"Oh my goodness!" Vivian exclaimed in relief.

"Are you okay?" Dillion asked even if it was a stupid question.

"Yeah, I am now. Thanks for coming faster, the bastard could have killed me" Vivian said cleaning herself as she stood on her feet.

Dillion looked around wondering where they kept Shawna.

"Hey" he called out to the guy still crying his eyes out on the floor.

"Where is the lady with the golden brown hair?" He asked.

The guy ignored him, he kept crying.

"Look, I don't need your tears, I need answers" Dillon groaned and stepped on that feet he shot. The guy cried harder.

"I'll cooperate, I'll cooperate" he cried out the more.

"Good, now tell me where you guys kept her" he demanded.

"She's not anywhere around here, she's being taken far away from here" the guy replied.

"What do you mean by that? Where was she taken to and why was she taken there?" He asked.

"Well, she's a bait to lure you. Isn't it obvious?" The guy yelled. Dillion slapped him.

"You don't reply me like that idiot. I'm not your f\*\*k\*ng mate, now get up on your f\*\*k\*d up feet" he commanded.

"I can't stand, you shot me right? I can't stand" the guy said.

"Look, I don't care if you stand with your f\*\*k\*ng tongue, it's the least of my problems actually so if you don't want me to shot your other leg, you will stand this instant" he rasped.

The guy nodded and managed to stand with one feet.

"Now lead to the f\*\*k\*ng place you took her too" he demanded.

The guy started towards the door, making sure his other leg doesn't touch the ground until they got outside to where Dillion's car was actually brought to.

"Dillion" Vivian called and Dillion turned to look at her.

"He said it's a trap and you're still going?" Vivian

asked.

"Why shouldn't I? Am the one they need and not her" Dillion said.

"Well, don't you think you should assemble your boys? It won't be good walking into a trap alone" vivian stated.

"Then should I walk into a trap with all of them? I don't need bloodshed, not now so I've got this myself, wait here. I don't want you following me there either" Dillion replied.

"No, there is no way I'm letting you go there yourself, if you're going. I'm coming with you" vivian insisted.

"I'm not changing my mind, I already have her to worry about, I don't need another person added to the list" Dillion said through gritted teeth.

He was getting angry at her for actually arguing with him.

"This mess happened because I actually became stupid, if I hadn't allowed you two to follow me then I'll be the only person finding my way out. I think I

will stop being stupid from now on and that starts with you actually leaving" he stated again firmly anger cussing through his system.

Actually blaming himself that Shawna is somewhere and he doesn't even know what's happening to her at the moment.

.

.

(Escaping 2)

Writer's POV

"Oh...please don't hurt me with the iron" Shawna pleaded as the guy with the hot iron brought it really close to her face. Even tho the iron hasn't been placed on her skin, she could still feel the hotness burning her skin.

"Hold on" Matthias father said to the guy with the iron and he stopped what he was trying to do.

Shawna sighed in great relief.

"Now, this is your last chance" the time is far spent. Tell me all I need to know, Matthias father

demanded.

Far from there.

As Dillion pushed the guy he had shot on his leg into his car, a car drove in there and stopped right in front of Dillion's car.

The people inside came and he recognized them.

He closed his car door and waited for them to come closer. Jay was the one in front, as he came closer and was about apologized for not checking out the location in time before anything else Dillion stopped him.

"I don't need your apology right now. What have you guys got?" Dillion asked looking behind him to see Sam, Rockie and Luwis.

"Well, we brought explosive, a silencer, a bullet proof in case and a tearg...."

"That's enough, bring them over to my car. Luwis I need you to take Vivian back...to the underground house for now, I have to deal with this guys first, until I'm done with them going back to the mansion

isn't safe. Also make sure the rest are okay there"  
Dillion instructed getting into his car.

"Okay" Jay replied and left.

"Okay" Luwis also replied but paused to think.

Isn't Shawna with them? He turned back to Dillion.

"Um...Boss, did Shawna come out with you?" He asked.

"Why do you ask?" Dillion asked back.

"I just..."

"She did and am trying to go get her from wherever they took her to" Dillion explained, Luwis's eyes widened.

"Go back with her" Dillion added referring to Vivian who has been standing there fuming.

"But...but..can't Rockie take her back? Please I also wanna join you" Luwis asked.

"No" Dillion replied bluntly.

"Okay" Luwis answered and stepped back.

Sam, Jay and Rockie finished transferring everything they brought with them to Dillon Luxus's car and then they got in with him and left.

Luwis thought on what to do. Shawna is also there, I have to be there in case, he concluded in his mind.

I know he is gonna get mad, but I'll explain later, he thought to himself again and got into the car they came with.

"Hey get in, I'm going after them" he said to Vivian who rolled her eyes at him and got in with him.

He reversed the car and started following them.

Far from there

"Look young lady you're wasting my time. I don't really need your tears. The death of my son is still angering me, I might use it to kill you since you got him killed" Matthias father growled like a wounded animal angry that Shawna was tearing up instead of answering his questions.

"I didn't get him killed, he got himself killed" Shawna fired back.



One of the boys standing close to Shawna slapped her immediately for replying back at his boss like that.

Shawna held her cheek in pain as more tears rolled down her eyes.

"I don't have time to play with you. Once I leave this room do you know what will happen to you? My boys aren't as patient as I am as you can see so you better cooperate" Matthias father said trying to really scare answers out of her.

"But I don't really know a thing. You have said it, how can a mere property know a thing about her master, I just serve my duty and that's it" Shawna sniffed in tears as she replied.

"No! There is more to it. I want to know how much that bastard is worth, that beast. I can take you from him if I want to" Matthias father said.

"He is not a beast, your son is. For trying to force himself on me he is the bastard and the beast here" Shawna snarled, her voice coming low and deadly but the man still heard her.

"What??" Matthias father snapped and stood on his feet.

"You know what? Deal with her the way you want to a little. Maybe she thinks that I'm kidding with her" Matthias father ordered then stood up and backed her.

More fear gripped shawna as they made her lie forcefully on the bed and tied her there.

"Let me firstly design your face properly, maybe you'll stop being so stubborn" a guy there picked up the iron and moved closer to Shawna.

He took the hot iron really close to her face.

"No please, don't do that" Shawna pleaded. She doesn't even know how to help herself.

On the way.

Dillion had ordered the guy to call his boss and tell him that they shouldn't touch Shawna.

The boy did as he was told, he brought out his phone and dialed the number of one of the boys there with the man.

The guy picked up and the injured guy passed on the information to him.

Back to where they are holding Shawna.

Tears were already running down her eyes as she thought her face will be gone once the iron touches her. They will really burn her skin for her.

The guy that was called came in and passed on the information to the Matthias father and then Matthias father instructed them to leave Shawna.

"You're lucky" the guy with the iron whispered into Shawna's ears.

"That means he is on his way here, you all should get ready, I want him brought to me here alive" Matthias father instructed his boys and they all nodded and went outside. Only three stayed behind in the room with Shawna and the man.

It didn't take too long for Dillion to arrive at another isolated house, but this one was well furnished.

The gates were open as if they knew that he was close by.

He drove into the compound because he drove the car himself, he couldn't afford letting one of the boys with him drive the car. He doesn't want em to slow him down at all.

Dillion opened the car and came down, he looked up and saw a lot of boys up with guns pointing down at them.

"You know the plan, bring him out" he said loud enough for them to hear.

J ay opened the door of the car from the other side and dragged the gun that was wounded down with him. He started dragging him out of the gate with a gun pointed at his head in case the guy will scream out their plans to his friends.

The guys up wondered where J ay was dragging their friend too.

J ay got outside and made him sit on the floor.

"It's game over, it's either you die or let your friends die. Which one do you choose?" J ay asked the guy on the floor.

The guy continued breathing very fast not willing to die and let his friends live.

"Now do it" J ay commanded knowing he that he'll choose to live.

The guy started screaming.

"Come on guys, you have to help me, please help me" the guy pleaded.

Most of the guys up came down and went out of the gate to see the guy on the floor.

They were 8 of them actually.

J ay shifted away from them, he brought out the explosive with him and threw it in the mist of the guys coming out to save their friend then started running away from there.

The gun on the floor also knowing the plans forgot his hurting leg and started running away.

Before those 8 guys could figure out that what was thrown on the floor was explosive, it exploded and killed them all.

.

.

(Escaping 3)

Writer's POV

"Boss, he is here" one of Matthias's father boys announced to him.

"Untie her" he commanded one and he did as he was told.

Shawna's heart started beating faster.

Dillion is here? She thought in her head.

The guy that untied her stood her up and held her around her neck with a knife placed directly on her throat.

Shawna's fears increased. Any small mistake, she might die.

She watched the shape looking knife that was placed on her throat keenly praying that the guy's hand doesn't move or else...

Matthias's father sat down on his chair waiting for Dillion while the two other guys with him aside the

one holding Shawna pulled out their gun and pointed it to the door ready to shot.

Dillion who was still outside looked into the car to signal Sam and Rockie on what to do before he left, finding his way into the house.

The boys that saw him moving into the house didn't shot him, they kept pointing their guns at him but didn't shot him. Dillion just walked pass them freely because he knows they won't try to shot him because their boss has probably instructed them that they shouldn't kill him. At least not yet.

He also knows that Sam and Rockie will kill them for him once he moved pass them.

Then he got to the place that looked like a big sitting room. He saw two guys guarding a door ahead of him, he figured out that Shawna might be there so he pulled out his poisoned pins and shot at them.

Once the pin entered their body they dropped down dead.

One of the most rare weapon you will ever see. Very deadly and effective.

He got to the door and opened it but found the room empty.

"Shit!!" He cussed and kicked the dead bodies lying on the floor.

"You idiots made me waste this" he groaned referring to the poisoned pins.

Then his eyes caught an elevator there. He matched to the elevator and entered, immediately he entered, the elevator started moving him up ultimately

It got to its destination and stopped then opened. Dillion stepped out.

Few meters away from the gate, Luwis parked the car and wanted to come down. Vivian stopped him.

"I thought he ordered you to take me to the underground house or whatever! You brought me here and you want to go in?" Vivian asked.

"Just stay here, I'll be back" Luwis said then got down from the car.

Immediately he saw Jay on the floor coughing, he couldn't really escape the smoke that covered there



as a result of the explosive he exploded.

"Hey, are you okay?" He squatted down to lift him up.

"What are you doing here?" Jay coughed then asked.

"I followed you guys" Luwis replied then pulled him up to his feet and took him to the car.

"Stay here. Don't leave him" Luwis said to Vivian then left again.

Vivian turned to look at Jay then frowned again.

"Why should I be the one babysitting him? I'm out of here" she said then opened the car and got down.

Vivian hasn't gone far before she saw that guy she fought with last, the one Dillion had shot his leg.

She walked towards him and kicked him but he didn't move.

"Hey! Are you dead?" Vivian kicked him again but he didn't move.

"Well, I guess you are" Vivian concluded and left him there.

Luwis ran into the compound to find Sam and

Rockie exchanging bullets with the opponent.

He didn't come there to exchange bullet so he moved into the house and got to the sitting room, he saw the two dead bodies Dillion had killed then looked into the opened door there. He didn't find anyone, he turned and saw the elevator. He went to the elevator and got in, the elevator took him up straight then opened.

He came out of the elevator.

Dillion after coming out of the elevator saw four doors, two on the right and two on the left.

He kicked open the four of them but found the room empty.

What the f\*\*k!? Are they kidding me? He thought angrily standing in-between the four doors.

He went back into the elevator and came out again trying to figure out if this man was actually trying to see how smart he is.

Then he looked into the first room and sighed.

I really have no time for games, he thought then

went into the room concluding that the man was in there with Shawna.

The room looked empty, no bed, nothing inside. Just painted with white paint, same with the other rooms.

But there was one thing, a cotton covered the walls, he walked to a corner of the wall and lifted the cotton's open.

He touched the wall to see that it is really a wall. He left there and went to the other end, he lifted the cotton up and touched the wall. It looked hard but not as hard as the other side.

He knocked on the wall but found out it was just a door.

"Bastard!!" He cussed and kicked the door open.

He walked in to see shawna, she was the first person his eyes met.

Tears already covered her whole face, she was scared for her life.

The hold of the guy with a knife placed on her throat

tightened instantly. The knife was now touching her skin. A very sharp knife.

The two guys with guns there readied themselves in case Dillion starts to rebel immediately.

Matthias's father just remained seated on his seat, so calm.

Dillion wasn't calm at all. He was pissed off, that he wanted to immediately go and strangle the guy whose knife is on Shawna's neck.

But he decided to behave.

She's a bait to get you Dillion, behave! He reminded himself.

There was an extra seat there so he pulled it out and sat down.

"I've been waiting for you Mr Mark" Matthias father said smiling. A fake smile.

"I've been hearing a lot about you too lately" Dillion replied back through gritted teeth. He had no time at all to smile.

"So, what do you really want from me?" Dillion

asked trying to get to the root of all the trouble.

"There is no need to rush things Mr Mark. Do you recall a guy named Matthias?" Matthias father asked.

Dillion recalled.

"Of course, the bastard that was trying to reap what he did not sow" Dillion answered.

Matthias father laughed.

Shawna kept staring at them in fear, why is this man so calm? She wondered.

"Um...just a reminder, I want you to look up" Matthias father said.

Dillion looked up to see a bomb placed up.

"Once you try to pull the trigger I'll press this" Matthias father showed Dillion a remote.

"We all die" Dillion completed the remaining sentence for Matthias father.

"Yes, you're smart! I love that" Matthias father said.

"So, back to our discussion. I heard you came over

and killed Matthias" Matthias father said.

"Well, he was no longer needed. I had to take him....." Dillion was still saying before Luwis suddenly showed up from behind and shot down the two guys with a gun.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 24-25

.

© Blessing .

.

(Escaping 4 &5)

Writer's POV

As the two men Luwis just shot dropped down dead on the floor. Dillion had no other option, he had to

try and get the remote for the bomb planted up.

He acted real fast but the remote fell down from Matthias father's hand as he tried to snatch it.

The remote moved to Shawna's side, beside her feet.

There was tension in the room as the guy holding Shawna didn't know if he was to leave Shawna and grab the controller or keep on holding unto Shawna.

Matthias father tried going to grab the remote but of course Dillion held him back.

Luwis got in fully to the room and just as the guy that was holding Shawna decided that the remote is the best option, he made to squat down a bit and grab the remote still holding unto Shawna.

Luwis seeing this, targeted him and shot the gun.

Shawna's heart skipped because the bullet was likely to get her, she was standing in front of the gun.

Like what the hell is luwis thinking? She wondered.

And luckily the bullet met the guy on his hand he

wanted to use and pick up the remote.

The guy was forced to leave Shawna alone. The knife he was holding fell down from his hand.

Now the remote was left on the floor.

Dillion couldn't move, the Matthias father was too strong and the guy behind hasn't died, he only got shot on his hand.

Shawna's eyes went to the remote and she started squatting down to pick it up, her whole body was shaking. She is close to the state of breaking down in fear but she still had to pick up the remote.

Her hand met with the remote on the floor and she picked it up.

The guy behind her managed to pull out a gun with his other hand and he shot it at Shawna unexpectedly.

Dillion on seeing this left Matthias father and then he pushed Shawna out of the way of the bullet.

The bullet grazed her waist as it moved past her - unknowingly to her.



Dillion used that opportunity to kick the guy on the floor multiple times, he collected the remote from Shawna afterwards.

Then he turned towards Matthias father who was on the floor behind him.

"You lost" he said then looked up at Luwis at the door.

"Get him to his feet" Dillion ordered not wanting to question the fact that he was there.

Matthias father turned to Luwis on the door, he had a shocked expression on on seeing Luwis clearly but it looked like Luwis tried avoiding the man's gaze.

Dillion noticed this but didn't show it.

He went to the guy who was formally holding Shawna and collected his gun from him.

"What do you think you were trying to do?" Dillion groaned.

"Please...please don't kill me" the guy pleaded.

"You are a dead man already. Can the dead come

back to life?" Dillion asked sarcastically then shot him on his forehead.

Shawna who was sitting on the floor trembling in fear and relief at the same time gasped.

He turned back to see Shawna staring at him, the way she stared at him seems strange.

What is going on on her mind?

"Get up" he stretched his hand towards her.

Shawna hasitated before she grabbed his hand.

You're wondering what is going on on her mind?  
Well she actually thinking.

Why will a guy like him kill without showing mercy most times? He kills as if he is an assassin.

But he at the same time has a lot of good side and he couldn't be killing them if they didn't come for trouble first.

"Get a grip of yourself" Dillion said to the shaking Shawna.

"Boss!!! The cops" the cops are coming, Sam rushed

into the room and informed Dillion.

"Let's go" he ordered and immediately pulled Shawna with him out of the building.

He saw vivian leaning on his car outside.

It didn't surprise him that she is also there, since Luwis is there. It meant that she must also be here.

They got in hurriedly into the two cars they came with and drove off.

Shawna, Dillion and Vivian were inside a car while Jay, Sam, Rockie, Luwis and Matthias father were in the other car.

2 hours later they were able to escape the cops and arrive at the underground house.

Immediately Dillion called ma'am Sandra to ask if they were okay.

Ma'am replied that all was well, then he disconnected the call.

The underground house was built far away from where houses were, and there is truly an underground there where weapons were stored. A

lot of weapons.

But a normal person wouldn't know that the house has an underground until you're shown.

There is a sitting room up and down. Sam escorted Shawna and Vivian to the sitting room up because boys mostly filled the down sitting room.

Shawna sat down still unable to control herself. She still felt scared but not that much.

Vivian sat opposite her with her hands folded, she occasionally glares at Shawna who didn't even notice her glare.

Shawna's mind was far away from there.

Dillion stood outside in the compound with Dillion. He collected a cigarette pack from one of his boys there and lit it up.

Matthias father was also outside but there was no way he could escape.

"Which way do you wanna die sir?" Dillion asked sounding so polite.

Matthias father frowned.

"I really underestimated you and your small boys, I thought you weren't matured enough to really face me but I was wrong" he said.

"I asked you what way you wanna die. I'm doing you a favor" Dillion replied him puffing out smoke.

"Just kill me in whatever way you want" the man said and looked at Luwis again.

Luwis looked away. Dillion noticed but still didn't show it.

"Luwis, I want you to kill him" Dillion said after a long while.

Luwis brought out the gun with him and pointed it to the man.

"Are you just gonna kill him that way? So simple?" Dillion asked.

Luwis didn't reply, he immediately shot the man on his forehead and the man died.

"Everything is going wrong and why is that? I wonder how they got to know my personal number" Dillion said then turned to look at Luwis.

Luwis looked away then kept mute.

"Luwis" Dillon called.

"Boss" Luwis replied and looked at him.

"Do you know this man? Have you seen him before?" Dillon questioned.

"N...."

"Don't lie. I'll kill you if you lie to me Luwis and I'm not joking. Did you help this man?" Dillon snapped.

Luwis remained mute again.

Dillion wanted to speak again when Sam rushed out of the house.

"Boss?" Sam called.

Dillion turned to him.

"It's Shawna, she...she just collapsed and she is bleeding from the side of her stomach, I don't know if she got shot or what" Sam announced.

"What?? She collapsed?" Dillion asked as if he didn't hear him the first time.

"Yes boss, and..."

"Call Matthew right away and send him here" he interrupted him.

"But Boss, that doctor can't come here. If a lot of people gets to know this place then..." Sam tried reminding him as he rushed into the house to where Shawna was.

"Just f\*\*k\*ng call him here. Tell him it's me" Dillion hushed going up to Shawna.

He got to where Shawna laid on the couch and stopped walking.

He stared down at her and felt a cut inside him.

Why didn't I notice this earlier? She was with me but I didn't notice, he thought then lifted her top up.

No bullet in her but she was still wounded.

He sighed and ruffled his hair.

"She'll be fine" Vivian said from behind him.

"I mean no bullet got her, I wonder why she didn't speak out earlier t...."

"Will you shut up!!? I don't want to hear a word from you" Dillion snapped at her.

The way and manner he had shut her up terrified her.

Her mouth dropped close.

"Someone should send her to my penthouse, I don't want her here" Dillon sighed then said, but he's voice didn't come out hard and loud.

"Yes boss" he heard someone reply him.

"You're really sending me away?" Vivian found her mouth then asked.

"The penthouse is the safest place for you. I don't want you get hurt honestly, so you stay there until you're done with whatever you came here to do" Dillion replied her.

He wasn't facing her. He backed her as he spoke, he's eyes couldn't leave Shawna's closed eyes.

"Goodbye" he added dismissing her.

One of his boys there started taking her away.



She boiled in anger as he took her.

How could this happen? I haven't even started accomplishing any of my plans, she thought with fisted hands.

"Is he coming?" Dillion asked after a while. He asked anyone behind him, just anyone.

Sam who was standing few feet from him answered.

"I already called him but since he doesn't know this place. Cisco has gone to bring him here" Sam replied.

Luwis was also standing behind him but a few feet away.

He doesn't wanna get closer in other not to provoke Dillion the more.

He just watched as Dillion watched over Shawna.

Dillion, he agreed has changed a lot. He is making mistakes. A lot of mistakes.

Normally no outside could come to the underground house but he brought, Shawna, Vivian and now a doctor is coming there.

He has also become a little weak, is this to my advantage? Luwis thought as he watched them.

"Luwis we need to talk" Sam whispered into his ears but Luwis didn't reply.

Sam started pulling luwis to a room there. He got into the room with luwis and shut the door.

"What is wrong with you man? Don't tell me you really gave out information to that old man?" Sam whispered.

Luwis ignored him and went to sit down on the bed. He's hand ruffled his hair.

"Hey! You wouldn't ever betray him would you?" Sam asked again.

Luwis kept mute.

"I'll take your silence for a no cause I can't believe you will ever betray him" Sam whispered again and sat down on the bed beside him.

"Look, if there is anything that is bothering you, you can talk to me. That's why we are brothers. I can help" sam cooed.

"No! You can't help me, I can't help myself either so let's just forget about it" Luwis finally said and stood up on his feet.

"I did" he added before leaving the room.

"Shit!" Sam groaned knowing what he meant by "I did".

That means Luwis had actually betrayed the boss.

Dillion after a while took Shawna to a room and laid her there.

His mind not at rest. He had every terrible feeling one shouldn't feel in the world.

Sad, scared, disappointed, bad. He felt worst as he stared at her.

All this happened because of him. He has grown too weak.

He acts without really thinking too. It's starting to make people around him misbehave too. It's affecting him.

If he hasn't let Vivian and Shawna follow him then it could have been a different story.

They couldn't have gotten him because he couldn't have stepped down from the car.

Because of his weakness. He gives command they don't follow it.

He can't believe luwis actually sold some information to that man and he still lives under him pretentiously but the worst thing is that, he can't even kill luwis even if he wants to.

He can't because he had actually grown up with him. Even tho he is the boss, luwis is still the closest person to him in the world.

Why did he do it? Why did he betray me? Dillion wondered.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 26-28

.

© Blessing .

.

(Proposal)

Writer's POV

Few hours later.

Matthew treated Shawna and stitched up her wound than he later assured Dillion that Shawna will be okay after enough sleep.

Dillion later on walked out to the large sitting room in order to address his boys on the event that took place. It was already late in the night but they were all still fully awake.

He walked down to them and began.

"I'll take today's incident as if it never happened. But this shows that you should always be prepared because danger doesn't notify you before it comes. I wasn't prepared and I regret it. It won't ever happen again tho."

"You all should also take it as if nothing happened and move on."

"But next time, whenever I give command and its disobeyed, that individual - I don't care who he is will be dealt with. You can go back to what you are doing" he concluded not really in the mood to talk but it's a necessary thing for him to do.

He took the stairs back up, leaving the boys mumbling words to themselves.

He later sent for luwis, who appeared before.

He breathed in, then breathed out.

"I don't know why you did what you did but I hope it doesn't happen again. Like I said earlier, I'll pretend that what happened today never happened. I'll pretend not to know what you did."

"You can leave" he concluded and spared him a

glance.

Luwis nodded without uttering a word, then he left.

Then he sent for Sam.

Sam on getting to him wondered why he was being called.

"Boss" he called standing before him.

"Keep an eye on luwis" Dillion said. Sam gulped down wondering why he was given such a difficult task.

"Can you do that?" Dillion asked when Sam didn't say anything.



"Ye...yes, I can" replied sam.

"You can leave" he dismissed sam and he left.

When he got out to the door he stood there.

What is he trying to do? What is going on on his mind? Sam wondered but still grateful that Dillion didn't punish luwis in anyway.

Two days passed. Dillion returned to the mansion with Shawna.

Shawna on getting to the mansion became relieved. Staying in a room all day was tiring but there was also something else bothering her.

She has been wanting to apologise to Dillion for all

the troubles she caused him but he hasn't been giving her the chance to.

Even when they were heading back to the mansion together. He had kept his face straight and so mean that she didn't know how to bring up the conversation but when she finally summoned up courage, he asked her to keep quite.

Shawna narrated the everything that happened to ma'am Sandra and Beatrice. They kept listening with their mouths opened but were relieved that nothing worst happened to her.

Four days passed.

Shawna resumed school. But during those four days, Dillion seems to be purposely distancing himself far away from her.

She only saw him once in those four days and that was when he was on a call walking down to the garage to go out.

She felt so bad. So worse that Dillion was actually behaving that way.

He must be angry at me for causing more troubles for him, she blamed herself.

If I hadn't followed him out, out of stubbornness then things could have been different, she kept blaming herself.

And now he doesn't even want to see me at all. It's like I make him sick, she concluded in her head.

I guess I should just concentrate fully on my studies then.

A day passed.

Vivian after spending days in Dillion's penthouse got really sick. "Like shit! I don't wanna be here" she said to herself.

I have to see Dillion at least once and then look for a way to revisit and probably get down to business with him.

"My clothes are still in his mansion right?" She asked herself.

Yeah, I should go back with this excuse. She concluded in her mind and then left.

She got to the house just when Luwis also arrived at the mansion. Luwis had been in the underground

house but couldn't stay there anymore, he decided to at least come and see how Shawna is doing.

They bumped into each other but Luwis ignored her and wanted to continue on her way when Vivian stopped him.

"Hey! I have a proposal for you" she said to him.

Luwis stopped and looked back at her.

"I don't want anything to do with you" luwis replied bluntly and made to leave.

"Shawna. You are in love with her, aren't you?"  
Vivian asked making luwis turn to look at her again.

"How is that your business?" Luwis questioned with

a frown.

"I can help you make her yours because I also want Dillion for myself" he whispered to him.

"So?" Luwis asked.

"We work together and separate them. You get Shawna while I get Dillion" Vivian answered with a smirk.

Luwis chuckled.

"You are one hell of a bit\*h. I could have love to work with you but um....I don't fancy bit\*hes. And I don't like you in particular. You should find someone else. I solve my problems myself" Luwis replied dismissing her.

Vivian frowned deeply at his response to her.

"F\*\*k you!" She cussed really pissed.

"I was just trying to help your goddamned moth\*rf\*cking c\*ck" she hissed before leaving in search of Dillion.

.

.

(Vivian)

Writer's POV

Vivian climbed up the stairs to Dillion's room, she got to his room and knocked on it but didn't hear a

response from the inside.

She turned the door knob and the door opened, she entered and looked inside.

Oh! He's not here, her mind told her and she closed back the door.

She walked down to the kitchen side to look for a maid, she saw Beatrice and asked about the whereabouts of Dillion. Beatrice informed her that Dillion just got back from where he went to and he is currently in the study.

Vivian smiled happy that he is around.

"Can you get me a glass of wine and two glass cups?" Vivian inquired.



"Ye...yes" Beatrice replied looking at her suspiciously.

She left and returned with what Beatrice asked for. Vivian collected it and went straight to the study.

Dillion on his side has been so busy, the day he has been waiting for, for years, is finally getting close. The day the man he wants to avenge will get back to Paris.

He plans on attacking that same day, taking him unaware and he is not gonna spare any of his family members either, just like the man wanted to kill he and his siblings too.

Dilly had called him days ago to tell him that he has a son. He doesn't quite understand it but he left the matter aside to focus on what he wants.

He sat down in the study studying some documents which needed his signature before the door opened.

He was backing the door and didn't know who it was.

"What do you want?" He simply asked whoever was at the door.

"It's me Dillion" Vivian's voice answered him.

He paused on what he was doing but didn't turn to look at her.

"I asked what you wanted" Dillion repeated huskily.

"I came to take my clothes and I..." vivian started undressing herself.

"Wanted us to enjoy" she completed her words now left in a push up bra and panties which barely covered her lower body.

Vivian took the wine up and opened it making Dillion turn to see what she was doing.

He huffed and turned back to his work.

"I'm not in the mood, you can leave" he stated not sounding harsh or calm.

"This is the last day Dillion. Please, enjoy with me" Vivian pleaded in a seductive tone. She catwalked towards him and decanted a little quantity of wine into another glass cup. She kept the cup on the table beside the documents.

She poured herself a glass too.

"Don't you understand simple instruction vivian?"  
He asked his voice becoming hard and daring.

Vivian was startled but decided not to show it.

"Come on" she placed her hand on his shoulder  
forcing Dillion up to his feet.

Vivian shifted backwards in fear immediately.

Dillion turned fully to face her.

Another thing he knows about vivian is that she has  
always had eyes for him. But it didn't bother him, he  
doesn't even care at all.

But since she has pushed things this far then he is going to make her regret it.

He started walking towards her, taking deadly steps. He's facial expression like that of an angry beast.

Vivian continued shifting backwards. She doesn't know what is going on on his mind.

Oh I wish I had just leaf, she blamed herself.

She got to the door and stopped because she couldn't continue moving.

Dillion also got to her and stood, very close to her - very very close to her. Their bodies were literally touching.

Vivian was supposed to be enjoying this but she wasn't enjoying it at all.

"Don't you understand simple instruction?" He asked her again. He's voice less harsh.

She shuddered.

Dillion did as if he wanted to kiss her, he took his hand up to her chin and drew it up.

Vivian eyes stayed wide open. Wide open in fear.

Then Dillion took his hand down to her abdomen and to then her pu\*s\*y.

Vivian shuddered again, fear instantly vanishing from her. Her fears were replaced with pleasures.

She felt in between her legs throbbing.

Dillion rubbed her clit through her panties his eyes on hers.

Vivian clamped her mouth shut in order not to release the moans that filled her mouth.

Her legs started shaking vigorously. Her pussy soaked wet at what Dillion was doing to her.

Her nipples hardened.

"Please...." vivian moaned out.

"What?" Dillion asked.

"Please" she said out clearly this time.

"You want me to continue?\_ Dillion asked and she nodded.

"Good" Dillion leaned closer to her ear and whispered.

"Get out" he stopped touching her and then took steps backwards.

The glass cup she was still holding fell off her hand as he ordered her to get out.

He can't be serious, can he? She thought.

After making her this way, he wants her to leave?



"Now!!" He added firmly. He picked up her dress which was on the floor and threw it at her.

"I won't repeat myself" Dillion groaned.

Vivian with shaky legs went out of the study.

She leaned her back on the door with wide eyes. Did Dillion just leave her this way?

He left her wet and hurting!

"F\*\*k!" She cussed so mad. So so mad!

"Bit\*h!" Dillion mumbled after she felt. He went to the toilet built inside the room and washed his hands.

Then got back to his table, he took the wine she poured for him and gulped it down but unknowingly to him. Vivian had added something to the drink - something to turn him up.

Vivian started putting on her clothes, ignoring her body. She was damn horny but what to do?

She started walking away but bumped into Shawna who was just returning from school.

Vivian stopped in front of Shawna not wanting her to pass.

"Guess what? I just made out with Dillion just now" Vivian said to Shawna.

Shawna looked at the direction of where she was coming out from and ignored her, she started

leaving.

Vivian was shocked at Shawna's reaction. Shawna had literally snubbed her.

Shawna walked a few distance but stopped, she started moving backwards to see if Vivian was still in sight but saw that she was no longer in sight.

She doesn't know why but she wanted to confirm if what Vivian said was true. She started tip toping to the room Vivian came out from. When she got there she stopped and turned the door knob open carefully, she peeped into the study to truly find Dillion there. He's hand on his temple as if he was thinking.

Shawna breathed out sadly then quietly closed the door in hope Dillion doesn't hear the sound of the door.

"Who's there?" Shawna heard Dillion's thick voice and took to her heels. She ran all the way to her room to find Luwis there - waiting for her.

.

.

(S\*xing)

Writer's POV

"Luwis, what are you doing here. It's been long I saw you last" Shawna asked walking in fully to her room.

"Hey, just wanted to see how you're doing" Luwis answered standing up and walking to her.

"Where have you been?" Shawna asked.

"Been in the underground house. Do you wanna take a walk with me around?" Luwis offered.

"Um...okay, let me just drop my bag" Shawna replied dropping off her bag.

After dropping her bag the two of them walked out exploring most places Shawna has never been to around the big mansion.

"Woah! This place is so big" Shawna exclaimed happily.

"Yeah right? Dillion's parents actually owns this place" Luwis said to her.

"Really?" Shawna stopped and looked at him.

She doesn't really know much about Dillion.

"Yeah, but they are both dead now" Luwis answered.

"Um...how old is he? Do you know his age?" Shawna asked and then cringed a little.

"The boss?" Luwis asked for confirmation.

"Yes" Shawna confirmed.

"He's 27years old" Luwis supplied.

"What? He is that old?" Shawna exclaimed.

"What do you mean old? He's young" Luwis chuckled.

"I just thought..I thought he was a year or two years older than me, I never thought he'll be 7 years older than me" Shawna answered really surprised.

"They all look younger than their age, it's kind of a family trait but wait, so you're 20?" Luwis inquired.

"Yeah - recently turned 20" Shawna replied.

"When was that? You didn't tell me" Luwis asked.

"Just a few days ago. The day that incident happen, I don't usually celebrate birthdays so it doesn't bother me" Shawna responded removing part of her hair that blocked her eyes from her face.

Dillion, who was still stuck inside the study wondered what was happening to him.

He lifted the wine cup and finished the wine inside it and then stood up. He felt so hot, so heated.

He unbuckled his shirt and pulled it off in hope he stops feeling that way but it didn't work so he decided to go outside and receive some natural air to see if that could help.

He walked out of the study to a side that looked like a lobby and stood there. Because of how that particular place is built out, you can always receive fresh air from there.

He's eyes started surveying the mansion and it mistakenly landed on Shawna and Luwis.



Yeah. It was a big mistake.

Shawna and Luwis didn't notice him staring at them. They continued talking absent mindedly.

"Woah, next time you should inform me Shawna. Don't forget" Luwis frowned at her as if he was annoyed.

Shawna smiled. "Okay I'm sorry, so when is yours? How old are you?" She asked.

"I already had mine early, before you came here. I'm 23" Luwis answered her.

"Wow! You're young" Shawna exclaimed and they both laughed.

Heavy breeze blew and her hair covered her eyes again, before shawna could lift her hand to her hair Luwis already did it for her.

It left Shawna speechless.

Dillion on seeing what happened left there and went down, he called a maid and instructed her to go call Shawna outside.

"Tell her to meet me in my room now" Dillion instructed.

"Ye..yes sir" that maid replied and ran off.

Dillion ran his finger through his hair, for a moment. He actually forget what was originally happening to him and the thought of Shawna filled his head.

He climbed up the stairs to his room and went into the bathroom to wash his face and hands.

He closed his eyes and opened it again, he imagined seeing Luwis and Shawna together then shook his head.

He came out of the bathroom after some minutes to see Shawna opening the door and peeping inside his room.

"Come in" he ordered. The urge driving him early coming back with full force.

He thought he could put the urge and feelings behind him but seeing her curious eyes, he became really horny.

He was forced to stop looking at her for a moment.

What is wrong with you? You're angry at her, okay, he tried reminding himself but the urge became much more stronger.

Shawna stared at him from behind for a reply. She is actually happy he sent for her.

She is really really happy.

Why is he facing elsewhere? She wondered and moved closer to him. She touched his shoulder and he snap at her.

"Don't touch me" he snapped. Her touch did a lot more to him.

He felt he's manhood really hardening.

"But...why?" Shawna asked foolishly.

"Are you still angry at me? I wanted to apologise for all the troubles I caused" she spoke up walking to face him.

"I'm really sorry" Shawna apologized.

Dillion saw the way her lips moved sexily and the thought of kissing her became his first objective.

He started moving closer to her, Shawna moved back a bit before stopping.

Dillion's eyes were still fixed on her lips and this she noticed.

If he is going to kiss me then I'm more than ready, she thought and stood her ground.

Dillion on getting to her, raised her chin up a bit before placing his lips and hers.

The kiss wasn't slow. He was literally out of his mind. He kissed her so fast and roughly.

He's hands wrapped around her waist, her boobs were pressing hard against his shit.

He tried so much to control himself and he stopped for a moment but didn't move away from her. It gave Shawna space to breathe. She already ran out of breathe.

He didn't wait for long before he kissed her again,

savouring the taste of her lips, her tongue. Shawna didn't have to fight, she just let him take the kiss to the next level.

Soon, Dillion lifted her up and took her to the bed not breaking the kiss one bit.

He stayed on top of her and kissed her neck, her chest, earlobe, her cheeks.

Shawna was really shocked that he was doing those with her but she didn't think much about it because he has already strangely gotten her wet.

Something she hasn't felt before. She wanted him - so badly. She doesn't understand herself.

Her ni\*ples were already hard and her V was heated up.

As Dillion kissed her neck and chest region she recalled that she hasn't even taken her bath.

She made to tell him but he shut her up with a kiss, he resumed kissing her on her lips and was unbuckling his trouser at the same time. He couldn't wait anymore.

After a while, he stopped kissing her to properly pull the trouser off.

He pulled it off but was still on his shorts. Shawna didn't know where she got the crazy idea from to help him with the shorts herself.

She wasn't even herself at the moment so it's fine.

She took her hand to his shorts and held it. It



surprised Dillion even in that state, he wasn't planning on pulling the short off now but he allowed her do whatever she wanted.

Shawna felt crazy doing what she was doing but she did it anyways. She pulled down his shorts and for the first time saw his d\*\*k. His manhood wasn't so long, let's just say it's normal.

Shawna swallowed as she felt her V getting more heated. She felt things she never felt just staring at him down there.

Then Dillion did the unexpected, he also helped her in getting starked naked. And now both were naked and very much heated.

After a few minutes of romance. Dillion finally did it, he spread her legs apart and positioned himself well in between her before pushing himself into her.

Shawna's eyes closed, she felt pain and pleasure swimming through her system.

She didn't know when she released a long moan. After pushing his all into her, making sure his whole length was inside her. He started thrusting in and out and was kind of slow at the beginning.

He slowness was because he was trying to control himself but he lost it after some thrust. He's urgent needs clouded his mind and his thrust became fast, it became faster, and then very much fast.

Shawna held unto the bed cover as he moved real fast into her. Her mouth couldn't close anymore.

The pain and pleasure she felt became too much, she moaned loudly. But she wanted him to slow down, she doesn't know how to ask.

She remained like that for a while before reaching out for his lips again. She doesn't know why she felt that it will all be better if he was kissing her and s\*xing her at the same time.

She reached for his lips and started kissing him and truly that distracted him, he slowed down just a bit as he kissed her back.

The skin slappingn between them reduced too.

Luwis wondered why Shawna hasn't returned after a long time and decided to go find out what she was actually doing in his room close to an hour.

He got to the door and stood to see whether he was punishing her but heard the sound of skin slapping and moans.

The sounds didn't register in his head immediately but it later did and he figured out that Dillion was actually having s\*x with.

It made him really jealous but he left, he left the mansion to think of what next to do.

He is still using her as his s\*x toy, he had concluded in his mind.

The kissing and s\*xing went on for a long time. Dillion literally made Shawna worn out and still wasn't satisfied. The drug vivian had put in was still working so he just gave Shawna time to rest before he started with her all over again.

TBC Dillion

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 29-30

.

© Blessing .

.

(Suzan)

Writer's POV

After long hours of s\*x. Shawna could barely breathe. She just fell into deep sleep beside Dillion.

The effect of the substance vivian had put inside the wine still didn't wash off, even after Shawna slept off tiredly but Dillion was able to hold himself and also fell into deep sleep.

The next day, almost noon time.

Shawna's eyes opened and her stomach grumbled out of hunger.

She sat up from the bed and looked beside her to see Dillion still sleeping. She recalled what happened between them the previous day and her face flushed red.

She came down from the bed slowly and wore her clothes. Then walked to the door and opened it, she went straight to her room and took her bath.

After bathing she rushed out to go look for what to eat. She hasn't eaten anything since yesterday.

She met ma'am Sandra downstairs and before she could open her mouth to speak.

"Go wait at the dinning" ma'am Sandra said.

Shawna gulped and then nodded. She held unto her stomach and rushed to the dinning ignoring the pains in between her legs.

A maid came up with a tray of food few minutes later and she ate it all up within few minutes.

She only realized how fast she eat when she had finished eating then she took the tray to the kitchen. Next she went to ma'am Sandra who was heading

upstairs.

"Is he awake?" Ma'am Sandra asked her.

Does she know we spent the night together? She wondered as to ma'am Sandra's question.

"Umm...who?" Shawna feigned ignorance.

"Dillion, I ask if he is awake. Didn't you two spend the night together?" Ma'am Sandra asked.

Shawna's cheeks turned red again.

"No, he is not" Shawna answered.

"Okay, but I think I need to wake him up. He hasn't slept like this before" Ma'am said still climbing up the stairs.

Shawna held her arm making her stop.

"Ma'am Sandra, can I get those pills I usually take when..." she paused not really knowing how to put it to the woman.

"When...you..." she stuttered.

"It's okay, I'll have a someone bring them to you" ma'am Sandra helped knowing what she was

asking for.

Yesterday, she had seen Luwis leaning on Dillion's door and then he later stormed out of the mansion in anger. She became curious as to why he reacted that way. She also went and leaned her ears on the door to know what's happening, then she understood why he reacted that way.

Ma'am Sandra had also noticed the way luwis looked at Shawna, the way he usually ask of her from other maids. Ma'am knows almost everything that happens in that mansion and that was how she knew that Luwis had eyes for Shawna.

And that was also why she had warned Shawna to stay away from him because she knows that Dillion hates sharing very much.

She left Shawna on the staircase and went to Dillion's room. She knocked before pushing the door open, not caring if he was dressed or not. After all, she had bathed him when he was still younger so there is nothing there to hide from her.

He walked in to the room and went close to his bed,



she tapped him gently but he didn't move. She tapped him again but he didn't move. She continued tapping him wondering why everything was different about him today.

He is not a deep sleeper so why is he not waking up, she wondered.

She took her hand to his ear and pulled it.

Dillion woke up due to his hurting ear.

"It's afternoon. You are still sleeping" Ma'am Sandra said.

Dillion looked around wondering what had happened.

"Afternoon?" He finally looked at ma'am's face then asked to be sure.

"Yes, look at the time. I just thought I should wake you up because it's unusual of you" ma'am Sandra replied him.

Dillion rubbed his temple in thought, then yesterday's incident flashed into his head.

He saw himself kissing someone but he wasn't sure,

and then the s\*x part. He jumped down from the bed, his shorts on and then left his room hurriedly to his office there. He sat on the chair and opened one of the computers.

"Don't tell me it's vivian please" he whispered to himself as he searched for yesterday footage of his room.

It came out and then started playing, he fast forwarded it until it got to the part Shawna came into his room. The part he turned away from her, the part he started kissing her then taking her to the bed, all the romance and the repeated s\*x.

Dillion's mouth widened.

That really happened? He wondered and found himself playing the scene back to the extent he couldn't stop.

He continued watching what he did with Shawna with an unknown smile on his face. He felt relieved that it wasn't vivian because he remembered she came to the mansion.

But what really happened? He thought.

I even forgot most of the moments. What happened to me? He wondered then went back to his room after some time. He took out his phone and dialed Matthew's line.

\*Mexico\*

"Come on Bryan, please escort me please?" Naomi pleaded with Bryan to escort her to the shopping mall. She plans on shopping because, school will be vacating soon and she will be going to paris to stay until school resumes again.

This past few days, their fight has reduced and she has fallen in love with him taking that Bryan is so smart.

He doesn't really snub her anymore but he's characters aren't changing.

"No, I have to do my homework okay" Bryan replied her.

"Please, I'll buy you dresses too" Naomi kept pleading.

"I don't need em. Dad already bought a lot for me,

I'm not a lady that changes her wardrobe every week" Bryan replied her bluntly and her mouth fell dropped open.

"What do you mean? Are you directly insulting me or what?" Naomi frowned then asked.

"Are you getting mad at me? Well it's a pity, I was already changing my mind on following you but since you're angry, I'll just watch my favorite cartoon after my assignment" Bryan replied her standing up.

"No!! I'm not angry, it's the opposite. Follow me please" Naomi forced a smile back on her face.

"Okay. I know your smiles are fake anyways but you'll still have to wait for me to finish up my homework. Dad is gonna be checking it when he returns, I don't want him getting mad at me" Bryan cooed then sat down back to complete his assignment.

\*

Dilly sat down in his office sit typing away in his system when a knock came and then the door

opened.

Suzan came in looking as hot as always.

A smile touched Dilly's lips but he was quick to put himself together.

"Um..sir, I need to go home now. I told you my mom will be coming and I have to go home early in order to welcome her" Suzan said.

"Really?" Dilly feigned ignorance.

"Yes sir" Suzan replied.

"Um...okay then" Dilly replied her simply.

"I'll get going now" Suzan said then turned to leave.

Dilly's mind kept telling him to drive her home but he kept pushing the thought aside. He knows she doesn't have a car and might probably take a cab home but he still wanted to take her.

Suzan got to the door but was stopped by Dilly's voice.

"Wait" he's voice came out husky.

Suzan turned to look at him.

He shut down his system then stood up. He walked up to her and stopped.

"Do you mind if I give you a ride home?" Dilly questioned.

Suzan's expression showed that of shock and surprise.

"Sir!" She called.

"If you don't want it I can..."

"No! I want it, please help me" Suzan interrupted him with smiles.

"Okay, you first" Dilly beckoned on her and then smiled in huge relief.

.

.

(Betray)

Writer's POV

\*Mexico\*

Dilly arrived with Suzan in her apartment and

parked his car.

"Come in and have something sir, maybe a glass of juice" Suzan offered as she stepped down from his car.

"Sure" Dilly replied already planning on following her.

Dilly turned the engine of his car off and got down from the car. They both walked to the elevator and Suzan imputed the number of the floor her apartment is built on.

The elevator took them up and opened when they had gotten to her floor. They both stepped out of the elevator and Suzan walked to her apartment door, Dilly followed.

She imputed her password and the door opened. She walked in and turned to look at Dilly, gesturing him to also come in.

Dilly nodded once and followed her in his eyes running round the sitting room.

"You can take a sit here" Suzan offered him a sit.

He nodded again and sat down on one of the

beautifully decorated couches.

"Lemme get you a..."

"No, it's okay" Dilly cut her in.

"No please, it's my pleasure" Suzan insisted and left for the kitchen. She came back with a glass of juice and offered him.

He collected it and gulped it down in one shot then gave her back the cup.

Suzan smiled while collecting the cup.

She can't believe her boss is in her apartment. Sitting down with his eyes running round. She felt pleased and happy. Extremely happy.

"So you won't like me to bring you a dessert or a snack?" Suzan asked after returning from dropping the cup off.

"No! Your apartment is great for a lady that lives alone" Dilly said standing up.

Suzan bite her lips together.

How does he know she lives alone? She thought.



"You are already leaving?" Suzan asked a worried look on her face.

"Yes, I have to. I still have some work at the office and I also have to return home fast for my son" Dilly reminded her.

This past few days, he has been leaving the office earlier than usual because of Bryan.

Suzan bite her lower lips again.

"Okay, I'll escort you to the door" she offered also fiddling with her nails.

She walked Dilly to the door and he stopped, she waited for Dilly to step out but he didn't. He turned back to her.

"Can I..." he paused.

"Can I kiss you?" Dilly asked shocking the living hell out of Suzan.

Her eyes widened.

"Sir!" She gasped.

Dilly gulped.

"I'm being stupid right?" He asked in a mutter but Suzan still heard him due to their closeness.

"No, you aren't. And you can, it'll be a dream come true" Suzan replied him muttering her last words.

Without wasting of time, Dilly lowered his lips to hers and kissed her, he kissed her so fast like he has been hungry for a kiss for days and truly. Dilly doesn't have time for ladies anymore, especially when Bryan's issue came up. He started reducing the way he sleeps with different girls and since Bryan started staying with him he totally gave up on other girls aside Suzan.

He still wants something with her. He's not really sure but he knows he wants something with her.

\*Paris\*

Fast forward.

Days later.

Dillion had later found out that Vivian had added an aphrodisiac drug into the wine she offered him. He had been a little mad and could have been more

angry if it hadn't been Shawna that he had ended up having s\*x with. He went to his penthouse and was informed that she already left.

The day to his revenge is drawing near and he needs to be more concentrated. Shawna always made him lose concentration so he decided to stay at his penthouse for a while.

Aside that, he doesn't even know what or how to react when he sees her. For someone as cold as him he is shocked at himself, he is nervous because of a lady.

He doesn't want to really think about the possibilities that he might have fallen in love with her because the mission ahead of him might cost him his life. So he stayed away.

Shawna on her own was done with her exams. They finished up a day before yesterday and since then she has always been looking for Dillion. Been praying to at least run into him but she has no idea that he wasn't really staying in the mansion with them. Although he comes, although he secretly

watches her. She doesn't know.

\*\*

"Sam, I need your help?" Luwis walked up to sam in the gym room.

"Yeah, what is it?" Sam asked.

"Will you help me?" Luwis asked making sam concentrate fully on him.

He dried his sweats and asked.

"With what exactly?" Sam saw the serious look on his face and worried.

"I can do anything within my power for you, you know that" Sam added.

"Yes, I know. So will you help?" Luwis went on asking.

"I will. If it's within my power, name it" Sam replied.

Luwis sighed.

"Can you watch over the boss for me? Just for a day" Luwis asked.

Sam's brows knitted together in confusion.

"Why? Why is that?" Sam asked.

"I need to go somewhere with Shawna" Luwis answered him.

"Then go, as far as you'll return. Why should there be a need watching him for you?" Sam inquired further.

"Because I won't ever be returning with her" Luwis supplied.

"What? You want to run away with her? Are you out of your mind, Luwis?" Sam shrieked in shock.

"You can call it whatever you want to call it. I'm just helping her, that's all" Luwis shrugged his shoulders.

"No! Don't ever try that. Once the boss gets you then am afraid, he might not spare you this time" Sam advised.

"That's why I need you to watch him for me" Luwis said.

"No! You do know he asked me to watch you. I can't betray him" Sam replied.

"I'm not asking you to betray him. I'm just asking him to watch over him" Luwis said.

"No, that's more like betraying for me" Sam replied him.

"I'm just helping Shawna. He'll just find another s\*x slave when he doesn't find Shawna anymore. That's it. I just don't want Shawna to keep being used, even tho she doesn't like me, it hurts less than seeing her being used" Luwis explained.

Sam wanted to tell him that Dillion actually cared for Shawna more than he thinks but held himself. Luwis won't change his mind, he's just like Dillion. They are stubborn when it comes to decision that they have made.

"Luwis please. Please brother. Are you gonna leave me?" Sam asked in a sad tone.

"I'm sorry. I can come back even if I get crucified, just for you but right now I need to help her" Luwis held him and said.

Sam shook his head.

"He's going to find you no matter what. He's going to find you" Sam said.

"You know the cave house at the sambia forest, there is no way he can find me there. Only you and I know about that cave" Luwis replied him.

"No..please luwis please. You have to rethink this. Don't let your love for her blind you, stop this" sam pleaded.

"What if Shawna was Naomi, Sam? Will you say that shit?" Luwis asked coldly.

Sam remained muted not knowing what to reply him but he knows that Luwis might end up dying sooner and he doesn't want that at all.

How will he set things right? It's either he betray Dillion or betray Luwis.

Luwis is more like his blood brother while Dillion is like his master. He's left in the middle of all the shit!

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 31-33

.

© Blessing..

.

(Luwis)

Writer's POV

Sam sighed really confused as he watched Luwis walk out of the gym. He sat down on the floor and buried his head on his palm in deep thought.

\*The next day\*

Shawna sat at the kitchen area watching the maids clean up. This past few days has been extremely boring for her with the fact that she no longer goes to school.

Her phone sometimes keeps her busy but most of the time. All she thinks about is seeing Dillion.



Is he hiding himself from me or isn't he just around?  
Shawna wondered.

"Hey girl, what are you thinking about?" Beatrice asked taking a sit in front of Shawna.

Shawna sighed wondering if she should ask Beatrice about Dillion's whereabouts.

Hope she isn't gonna think negativity tho, she thought and then decided that there was no harm in trying.

"Beatrice" she called.

"Yes" Beatrice answered.

"The young master, I've not been seeing him. Did he travel?" Shawna questioned.

"Well...not exactly, but he is not always around. I don't know where he goes tho, it's none of our business" Beatrice replied her.

"Any problem" she then asked.

"No, I'm just curious. There is no problem" Shawna answered forcing a smile to her face.

"Can you help me tell ma'am Sandra that I'll go up and come back? I wanna go take my phone"  
shawna said standing up.

"Yeah - sure" Beatrice replied.

Shawna nodded before leaving for her room.

She got to her room and entered, she went to the makeup table, she picked up her phone then turned back towards the door to see Luwis coming in.

\*

Sam after discussing with the guards at Dillion's penthouse finally gained access to him.

He met Dillion writing whatever on a piece of paper.

Dillion lifted his eyes and then looked at Sam as he came in.

"Boss" Sam greeted.

"Yeah, what are you doing here?" Dillion asked his eyes returning back to his note.

"Well...I..I just came to keep you company" Sam replied still on his feet.

"Keep me company?" Dillion asked surprised to hear that.

"Yes" sam answered him still standing.

"Okay, sit down" Dillion beckoned on him to sit.

"No, I'm okay. I want to stand" Sam replied him.

Dillion stopped what he was writing and looked at Sam.

"Are you okay? Do you need something?" Dillion asked in a concerned tone.

"No, I'm fine" Sam replied his eyes fixed on the floor.

Dillon watched Sam as he behaved unusually.

"Sit" Dillion said in a commanding tone.

Sam went and sat. He knows the difference between a command and a request. He can't disobey a command.

"What about luwis?" Dillion took his to him then asked.

Sam's heart skipped immediately.

Is he suspecting anything? Sam thought becoming nervous and scared, scared for Luwis.

"Luwis?" Sam asked as if he hadn't heard him.

"Yes" Dillion confirmed.

"He is okay. I mean he doesn't act unusual" Sam answered him.

Dillion finally took his eyes back to his book and continued writing what he was writing.

"You can help yourself in the kitchen" he mumbled words to Sam.

\*

"Luwis? What are you doing here. I wasn't expecting you" Shawna asked smiling.

"Yeah" Luwis drew his reply his eyes on Shawna's phone.

"Any problem?" Shawna asked noticing the way Luwis was staring at her phone.

"No, that's a new phone?" Luwis asked.

"Yeah, it's a new phone" Shawna replied turning the

phone sideways.

"Lemme see it" luwis requested. Shawna gave it to him.

He looked at it then gave it back to her.

"The boss sent me to actually get you" luwis cooed. Shawna's eyes beamed.

"Really?" She asked smiling.

"Yes, come on. Let's go" Luwis said.

"No, no. I have to dress up, I have to dress up" Shawna responded turning to look for a different dress to wear.

"Leave the dresses, you don't need to change. It's urgent actually" Luwis pulled her towards him. The phone fell down from her hand, she made to pick it up but he didn't let her.

"Let's just go" Luwis urged walking into the corridor with her.

"Hold on, slow down" Shawna kept asking him to but it was as if he wasn't listening to her. He held her hand till they got to the garage, they entered a

vehicle there and left the mansion.

Luwis drove for a long time in a very deserted road, there were only few cars passing along that way.

Shawna was a bit worried cause of Luwis strange behavior but was also happy that she can get to see Dillion again. She has been dying to see him. .

About 40 minutes later.

Shawna became more worried. Why will Dillion be in such a place? She wondered staring around and Luwis hasn't even said a word to her since they both entered the vehicle.

"Luwis?" Shawna called.

"What?" He asked her.

"Are we getting there yet? It looks like we're heading to a forest" Shawna asked then said.

Luwis after a long silence suddenly stopped the car. He turned and looked at Shawna.

"I lied" luwis said.

"Lied? I don't understand. What are you talking

about?" Shawna inquired truly confused.

"The boss didn't send for you. I just wanted you out from the mansion. I wanted to take you out from there, you'll never return there" Luwis explained.

Shawna's faced changed with a frown.

"You are joking, aren't you? Take me back!" she requested.

"I'm sorry. I can't" Luwis answered her.

She turned to the door and made to open it but couldn't.

"Let me out. I wanna go back" Shawna said.

"You wanna go back to being used? No, I won't let you" Luwis replied her. When she made to struggle, he hit her hard on the neck, knocking her out in the process.

Luwis continued driving after that trying hard to stop hearing the voices in his head that is telling him to go back. To stop what he is doing.

\*

"Sam" Dillion called.

Sam raised his head up to look at Dillion.

"Do you have anything to say to me? You have been here for long. Did something happen? Are you in some sort of trouble?" Dillion questioned.

"Of course not" sam forced a smile to his face but it didn't hide the fear in him.

Dillion's phone started ringing and he picked the phone.

"Ma'am Sandra informed him that Shawna wasn't anywhere around the mansion. She hasn't been seen for the past 1 hour" she informed.

"Okay, tell the guards to keep searching for her" Dillion replied to ma'am Sandra wondering where Shawna might have gone to.

He stood up and picked up his shirt hanging on the couch.

He walked pass Sam then he's mind flashed to Luwis.

Where is luwis? Dillion thought then looked at Sam.



Sam through Dillion's reply to ma'am s andra knew instantly that they were talking about shawna. He's fear grew bigger.

Dillion saw this .

Sam knows something about this, Dillion concluded in his mind but still walked to the door and opened it. He made to leave before Sam's voice stopped him.

"I have something to tell you. Its important" Sam said.

Dillion looked back to him.

"Where is she?" Dillion simply asked him.

The question didn't exactly shock Sam. Dillion was too smart and he kind of expected him to have figured out the whole thing.

"Luwis took her, please don't do anything to him" Sam pleaded walking closer to Dillion.

"Where did he take her to?" Dillion asked.

Sam bite his lower lip almost at the edge of tears.

"Please...he is just blinded. He took her to a cave at

sambia forest. It's deep into the forest, after you get a river there, at your left... you'll see the cave, it's covered in leaves so..." he bite his lip again a tear dropping from his eyes.

"Stay here" Dillion replied him simply before leaving. He hid his anger.

\*

Shawna opened her eyes an hour later to find herself somewhere that looked like a cave. In fear she stood up only for her to see Luwis.

"Luwis" she called recalling how he had knocked her out after refusing to let her down the car.

"Why are you doing this? Take me back please" she asked then pleaded.

Luwis looked at her then took his eyes elsewhere.

"No!" He replied firmly.

"Why?" She asked.

"I don't want you to get used again. I'll just hide us here in the meantime, after some days we'll leave...you don't have to worry too much, I've got

everything all planned out" luwis replied her.

Tears streamed out of Shawna's eyes. She sat down back on the floor.

"I didn't ask for this luwis. I didn't, but why are you doing this?" she cried.

"I'm really sorry for not lying in the first place. I just want you out of...." luwis paused on hearing sounds outside the cave.

"Luwis, come out now!" An angry voice of Dillion sounded outside.

Shawna stood up on her feet and looked at Luwis who looked so pained.

He didn't react, he just stood where he stood.

"Luwis" Shawna called expecting luwis to at least react since he had been caught.

But Luwis knew this. It's not possible for him to get here this fast if sam didn't tell on him. It killed his spirit.

To run was now the least of his problems, with Dillion and Sam. He can't run anywhere so he just

gave up knowingly.

Dillion soon appeared inside the cave to see Luwis and Shawna.

Shawna looked at Luwis before running to stand behind Dillion.

Dillion saw the tears in in Shawna's eyes, it got him more angry. It made him think that Luwis had hurt her.

"What do you think you're doing?" Dillion groaned out so angry.

"You can go ahead and kill me" Luwis just replied him simply. Dillion became much more angry at his arrogant reply. That minute, he forgot who luwis was actually to him and shot him because he came with a gun. He always go to most places with a gun.

He shot luwis but on his leg. No matter how angry he was, he still couldn't angrily kill him.

Luwis winched as the bullet burnt into his leg.

He grabbed hold of his leg and shut his eyes in pain.

Shawna gasped from behind Dillion. No matter

what he did, she still likes luwis as a friend.

Luwis finally sat down on the floor trying to take in the pains but it was killing him. But the most painful part of it all is that he lost even without really trying.

Dillion dropped the gun to the floor and ruffed his hair.

"Luwis, stop making me get angry at you. Stop all this" Dillion said in a pained voice.

Luwis kept mute.

"Why? Why did you take her? What do you intend to do?" Dillon asked.

"I intended to save her from you but seems it's all went wrong" luwis replied.

"Why? What is your main reason? Why?" Dillion demanded.

"Because I'm in love with her and I don't want her...I don't want her to be used anymore" Luwis replied muttering the last part.

Dillion huffed.

"But you shouldn't have taken her? Did she tell you that she wants to leave, huh!?" Dillion asked.

"She liked and feared you too much. I know she wasn't gonna agree, that's the reason I didn't ask her" Luwis replied in a pained voice.

"Get up, let's get you treated" Dillion said after a long silence.

Shawna continued crying behind Dillion as she watched Luwis in pains.

She didn't even know he loves her. Someone like her.

"No, don't bother. I'm gonna die anyways" Luwis answered him.

"What do you mean?" Dillon questioned.

"The bullet you used is poisoned, I won't survive it" Luwis said.

Dillion looked down at the gun. He picked it and brought out the bullets.

"What? How come?" Dillion asked shocked that the bullets aren't normal ones.

"I already predicted things, I don't wanna live after getting caught by you so I fixed in poisoned bullets into your gun. I know you were gonna bring it along if at all sam tells on me" Luwis answered then coughed.

"Oh Hell!" Dillion didn't no when he exclaimed.

Luwis coughed again and coughed out black blood this time.

Dillion went close to him and squatted.

"You can't still be saved" Dillion said.

"The poison doesn't have an antidote" Luwis coughed again and informed.

"Goodness! Why did you make me do this to you?" Dillon asked at the venge of tears.

"Just promise me, you'll stop using her. That's what I need right now, just promise me please" Luwis demanded.

Shawna cried her eyes out crying hearing those words. Even in this state he still cared about her.

"Luwis...no!" She cried unable to go close to him.

She couldn't lift her legs.

"I promise, just stay alive a little more" Dillion replied a tear escaping from his eyes.

Luwis forced a smile on before finally breathing his last.

.

To be continued...

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 34-35

.

© Blessing..

.

(Sadness)

Writer's POV



Sam got to the underground house quickly because he drove at a crazy high speed.

He parked in front of the gate then banged on the gate, some of the boys guarding the gate opened it and saw him.

Before they could say anything he ran in speedily. They all knew why he was reacting that way too. They all had seen Luwis dead body too. So they let him.

He got to the entrance and entered freely because the door was left open. And there, they laid luwis down on a bed and covered him up but leaving only his face. Dillion hasn't instructed them on what to do next because he wanted sam to see Luwis dead body first.

Sam felt a huge cut in his heart as he stared at Luwis from the entrance. Some of the boys close to Luwis body moved, moving far away from him.

Sam dragged himself to where luwis dead body laid. His hand found his mouth and he covered it.

Tears streaked down his cheeks uncontrollably.

"Hey" he called when he had gotten close.

"What are you doing lying there?" He asked as if he was about going crazy. He still doesn't wanna get it. He doesn't wanna understand that Luwis is truly the one lying there.

"Hey, get up!" He's voice came out a little loud as if he was trying to command a dead man on what to do.

"Get up bastard. This wasn't the plan, was it?" Sam asked uncovering him.

"Why are you so still? Your body is cold too. You don't even wanna open your eyes" he spoke so softly staring at Luwis from head to toe.

"This wasn't the plan. Are you faking things or what? You were okay earlier, how come you're lying here so cold and pale. You're no longer as handsome as you used to be, your skin is so pale, just get up and take a look at yourself" said sam.

He took his hand to his cheek and touched him.

Then he bursted out crying. He squatted to the floor

with Luwis hand in his.

"Please don't do this, we are in this together. Who gave you the permission to leave? Who gave you the permission? We have a lot of plans, we made a lot of them as kids. Why on Earth will you just leave without a final word? What am I supposed to do without you brother?" He cried out painfully.

Most of the boys there had to leave the sitting room in other not to join him in crying. Most just bowed their heads and held themselves -most that could control themselves.

"Nooooo....please, you said I was your little brother, didn't you? How dare you? How dare you.....?"

\*

Dillion had ordered a few bottles of vertigo.

That's the best way to deal with this, just drown myself in alcohol, he thought.

He opened about six bottles of alcohol and drank it all before you know it, vertigo being a bastard it was did a lot of harm to him.

First he passed out there, without anyone's knowledge.

The guards will all think he is fine inside, not knowing that he has already passed out.

\*

Shawna on her own was inconsolable.

She couldn't believe that she won't be seeing Luwis again. Her only male friend, even if they are not that tight but she still considers him her best friend.

"I should have known. I should have seen it. How stupid was I?"

"You have always been stupid Shawna. You couldn't see it."

"He fell for someone like you and you still treated him badly even in his last minute. How could you be so wicked? How could you have killed him? You didn't even do anything for him even as a friend."

"You're just useless. You should have died with your parents."

"Everyone leaves...they all leaves... maybe it's just

my fate. Maybe I can never be happy" she sobbed.

Beatrice and one other maid just stood watching her as she cried. They had tried consoling her but it wasn't getting anywhere.

Now ma'am had just sent someone to get her drugs that will induce her and make her sleep for long.

She just can't continue crying that way, she might cry herself to death - who knows? So she will just do the best she can and leave the rest.

Poor girl, ma'am Sandra had thought when she was formally there with her in her room.

When will suffering leave her?

.

.

(Moving on)

Writer's POV

So many days passed, Luwis got buried. Everything started returning back to normal but the pain still remained in their heart.

Dillion often regretted his actions. He regretted the fact that he couldn't control his anger and was too fast to shoot Luwis.

After learning about the full details of how Luwis died, Sam couldn't help but also get angry at Luwis for purposely setting up his own death.

For purposely leaving him even after all the plans they made. Dillion asked Sam to stay in the room he uses at the mansion in order not to misbehave outside out of grief - he obeyed and stayed.

And Naomi was currently on her way back to Paris. She had also heard about Luwis' death, she was not only close to Sam when they were still very young. She, Sam and Luwis were best friends then until she started drifting away from them.

Luwis also avoided her because of her sudden change in attitude. It was only Sam that continued disturbing her.

She felt bad that she wasn't totally on Luwis' good side, she never expected him to die. She also worried about Sam. How is he coping? She

wondered.

She had also wanted to come down to paris with Bryan but Dilly didn't hear of it so she just left without Bryan.

Another person who was also coming down to paris is Andrew. He has missed paris a lot, just wanted to use the break to wander around and also see Dillion.

Aside from them, Valentina and her twin has also arrived their father's house and will soon be visiting Dillion at the mansion.

Well Dillion hasn't been himself. Drowning himself with vertigo affected him a lot.

Sometimes he starts feeling that things around him are rotating, when it starts it lasts up to an hour and Matthew had formally warned him never to take vertigo again but seems he forgot that and took it again. Matthew told him that he might stop feeling like that after a month passes. He has also moved back to the mansion.

After luwis burial, he couldn't continue living outside the mansion. He wants to be around Shawna incase

she tries behaving stupidly like he behaved.

Shawna has also been inside her room, rarely comes out but today...Dillion had proposed to take her out even for a walk because ma'am Sandra always complained about her staying locked up in her room.

Shawna felt happy tho it didn't make the sad feeling inside her to wash away. She changed into a white tank top and a pair black trouser before checking herself out in the mirror.

She opened the door then came out to see the corridor looking deserted. She walked to Dillion's door and knocked softly on it.

"Come in" she heard him say.

She opened the door slightly then popped her head inside to see Dillion backing her.

She took one leg in then he turned to look at her.

She folded her lips out of shyness then fixed her eyes on the floor.

Dillion who was holding a stick of cigarette dropped



the cigarette on the table then walked up to her.

"Hey" he cooed.

She raised her eyes up to stare at him but was quick to take it back to the floor.

"Is it time yet?" He asked calmly. She nodded.

"Okay, you first" he beckoned on her.

Shawna looked at him wondering if he'll go out wearing just a singlet without an additional top. Tho the trouser he was putting on was okay.

Dillion ignored her looks and followed her out.

They both got down to the garage and that was when Dillion remembered car keys.

He isn't just going for any walk with her, he is going to also relieve his stress.

"Hey, come here" he called out to a guard by the gate.

The guard rushed to him.

"Go into my room and get one of the car keys there" he said to the guard.

"Sir...I have never gone into your room before, I don't...."

"I'll go" Shawna interrupted the guard.

"I'll get one" Shawna offered looking at Dillion. He nodded.

She turned then left, went up straight to his room. Opened the door and walked to the place she saw him standing, she saw the lit cigarette he had dropped, he had dropped it beside a picture and a white paper. She doesn't know why her mind told her to read through it, she did.

A grant of freedom was written in bold letters there then also she saw her name.

She dropped the paper, she saw different car keys there by a side, she picked one then left his room.

Freedom? Why is my name on that paper? She wondered as she walked down.

She got to him then handed the key to him.

He used the key to locate it's car. Then they both got in and left, it was already late in the evening and

there was a lot of traffic.

Dillion didn't wanna rush things at all so he obeyed all the traffic rules and by the time he arrived the place he had in mind everywhere was already looking dark.

He parked the car then came down, Shawna came down through the other side to realize that they were both at the bank of a river.

She smiled for the first time in days.

"Come here" Dillion beckoned on her and she went to him.

He held her by the waist then lifted her up to sit on the bonnet of the car, he sat beside her.

Everywhere was calm and cool. Only the wind and the sound of the river movement could be heard.

They both relaxed their minds, they needed it.

But Shawna didn't enjoy the silence for long. She wanted to talk to him but she doesn't know what to say and she doesn't know how to indicate her needs.

She took occasional glance at him. He noticed.

"What is it?" He asked her.

She folded her lips, started fiddling with her fingers as a wave of shyness blew over her.

"I..." she stuttered not even knowing what to ask.

"I..."she stuttered again then paused.

"I..."she stuttered for the third time then suddenly recalled what to say.

"I'm sorry" she mouthed.

Dillion looked at her.

"For what?" He asked.

"For everything. For all the troubles I caused you. I've been wanting to apologise but never got the opportunity" she mouthed again.

"It's okay" came Dillion's reply.

She blinked her eyes as silence took over again.

Then her mind went back to the paper.

A grant of freedom with her name on it.

Does he want to grant me my freedom? She thought.

Then that means we won't be able to see each other again and it means that I'll have to go back to my step father.

Is he perhaps tired of me? Is this a way of getting rid of me?

Once I go back to my step father, he'll sell me to another S\*x house.

Is he really getting rid of me? She couldn't help but get worried.

Thinking about it normally, it's a good thing but when it comes to Shawna. It's not good because perhaps she doesn't wanna leave Dillion.

Perhaps she can't bear living without seeing him.

She looked up at him with teary eyes.

"Are you getting rid of me?" She asked. The question surprised Dillion.

He took his full attention to her to see tears in her eyes even in the dark.

"Why are you tearing up?" He couldn't help but ask.

"You're getting rid of me, you'll return me back to him. He'll sell me out again" she said.

Dillion wasn't understanding her at all.

"Him? What him? Getting rid of you? Come on Shawna, explain better" he requested.

Shawna sniffed.

"Hey, don't cry. I don't like it" Dillion cooed.

She stared into his eyes as he said those words.

"You don't like it?" She found herself asking.

"Yes, because you look ugly when crying" he answered her.

She found herself chuckling.

He also chuckled.

"I won't cry again then" she mouthed thumbing her tears.

He also helped her in drying her tears.

"I aren't getting rid of you in anyway so don't ever think like that okay?" He cooed.

She nodded like a little kid.

He pulled her close then embraced her tightly.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 36-37

.

© Blessing..

.

(More kisses)

Writer's POV

After minutes of warm embrace, Dillion disengaged from the hug but placed his forehead on hers with his eyes shut.

Shawna also shut her eyes enjoying the cool feeling of him being so close to her.

After few minutes of doing that, Dillion felt as if he should kiss her, it's one of the ways of reliving the stress in him, stress that has been in him for some days now. So, he leaned more closer to her and their lips gazed each other.

Shawna could feel her breathing hitch. A different feeling overwhelmed her as she felt Dillion's soft warm lips on hers.

She started anticipating for the real kiss, for him to kiss her and make her forget herself at least for the early night.

But as Dillion was about to deepen the kiss he started feeling dizzy. Everything around him started rotating.

He groaned and moved away from Shawna, his hands holding his forehead.

He shut he's eyes, inwardly begging for the dizziness to stop in minutes, he knows it might even last up to 1 hour and he doesn't want that. Not when Shawna is right there beside him. All this are the side effect of vertigo - he knows.



Shawna looked at Dillion worried at his sudden behavior, she doesn't know if she's to hold him.

"Are you..are you okay?" She asked after staring at him for long.

"I'm fine" came Dillion's husky reply but she wasn't satisfied at all.

Something is definitely wrong with him, her mind told her.

She doesn't know where the sudden guts came from. She doesn't know how and when her hand went to his head and she started patting his hair downwards.

"Really?" Came out of her lips.

Dillion removed his hands from his forehead then opened his eyes to look at her. She quickly brought her hand down then took her eyes to the river ahead of them.

"I'm okay, just headache but it's okay" Dillion replied in assurance.

She took her eyes back to him then nodded.

The wind blew more heavily making everywhere cold. Shawna folded her hands as the cold air hit her.

"You're cold? Let's go into the car" Dillion said getting down from the bonnet of his car.

He helped Shawna down from the car then reversed it making the car face the river.

They both got in then Dillion turned on the car's heater.

"We should get going. I almost forget about Naomi" Dillion said recalling that Naomi was on her way to paris.

"No! Let's stay here a little longer" Shawna didn't know when she blurted out those words.

She feared that she won't be able to have the opportunity to be alone with him in a while. Alone with him outside the mansion.

She stared at Dillion with the corner of her eyes scared that he might snub her and drive home.

"Oh...okay" came his reply.

Shawna released the sigh she didn't know she was holding.

The both of them kept staring at the river until Shawna felt Dillion's hand wrap around her shoulder.

Shawna turned to look at Dillion in surprise, but Dillion didn't look back at her.

She smiled then gently placed her head on his shoulder.

Her stomach danced in happiness, she folded her lips together in order not to scream.

They stayed in silence again until Dillion decided to break it.

"That day" he started.

"The last time I sent for you, do you still remember?"  
Dillion asked.

Shawna's eyes widened on recalling it and knowing where he was heading. She suddenly started feeling extremely shy.

She raised her head from Dillion's shoulder. She

palmed her face.

"I don't remember" she mumbled to him.

Dillion turned to look at her and saw her palmed face. He chuckled.

"Seems like you do" he said.

Shawna turned away from him, she placed her head on the window of the car.

"Why are you acting shy? Weren't you the same person that took off my short?" Dillion asked then chuckled.

Shawna felt more embarrassed. She felt like disappearing from his sight but she didn't know how.

"Please just forget about it, please" she mumbled to him.

"Why?" He asked then made her turn to him. He removed her hands from her face.

"Why should I forget such sweet moment with you?" Dillion asked, his voice coming out calm.

Shawna felt her cheeks turn red in embarrassment the more.

She took her face down.

"Stop feeling shy around me. I want you to act the way you acted that day. That's the Shawna I want. I need that you" Dillion cooed then touch her chin. Her raised her chin up a bit.

Shawna folded her lips together not knowing what to say to him.

This sudden Dillion is so sweet, this new Dillion. She doesn't know what to say to him.

"Look at me" Dillion demanded calmly.

She looked at him in the eyes as demanded.

"Repeat after me."

"I Shawna" he said.

Shawna didn't know when she smiled.

"Come on, do it" he also chuckled.

"I'll stop being shy, I'll try my best" Shawna said concluding in her mind that he wants her to say that

she will stop being shy.

"Okay then. Then...prove something to me, prove that you'll stop feeling shy. I need you to peck my two cheeks" he said.

Shawna started feeling heated in between her legs, down there started acting weird as he said that.

She doesn't understand why her body is reacting that way because he asked her for a peck, tho a peck is not something too normal for her especially when it comes to Dillion.

"I'm waiting" said Dillion again.

Shawna summoned up all the courage she could get then pecked him on his left cheek, as she made to peck him on his right cheek real fast he turned his head purposely and made her kiss him.

Shawna moved away from him then gasped.

Did our lips just meet? She thought as the strange feelings in between her legs became more serious. She felt her V getting wet.

She became more embarrassed, she bowed her

head slightly and only lifted her head when she felt him moving closer to her.

She turned to look at him as he wrapped his hands around her neck then placed his lips on hers.

"I really want to go back to the mansion right now but my body doesn't want that. My body wants a different thing and that's you" Dillion mouthed in between the kiss then he deepened it with his other hand sliding down her waist.

.

.

(Naomi)

\*Mexico\*

Writer's POV

"When is my dad finishing with work?" Bryan turned to Suzan then asked.

"Um...in a while dear, I believe" Suzan answered him.

Bryan sighed really tired of sitting, he started wishing that he had followed Naomi to wherever

place she was traveling too.

Just waiting for Dilly outside the office is so boring. Tho he has a video game he is playing on a tab Dilly got for him, he has been playing the game for hours and he is fed up with it already.

"Why? You wanna go somewhere else?" Suzan asked.

"Yes, I'm tired" Dilly replied with a slight frown.

Suzan thought for a while then decided to walk him around the company.

She stood up.

"Okay Bryan, put down your tab. Let me just take you round the company and perhaps we also grab a cup of tea" Suzan said.

"Okay cool" Bryan replied dropping the tab immediately.

"Okay let's go" Suzan beckoned on him to move first.

He got out behind the big secretary desk then went straight to the elevator. He went on his toes and tried pressing the open button of the elevator but



wasn't tall enough for his hand to get there.

Suzan chuckled at little Bryan trying all his possibly best to get to the button. He always does the same thing everything he steps into the company, always trying to reach the buttons.

She pressed the buttons open.

The elevator opened and they both stepped in, it closed. Suzan pressed the button floor number. Then the elevator took them down.

It opened then they came out. Suzan held Bryan's hand tho Bryan didn't like the idea of Suzan holding him like a little kid who might get lost.

She took him to the reception side of the company, then filled two cups up from the tea machine there.

She handed one to Bryan, then took one for herself.

She breathed in and out as she took a sip from her tea. She immediately looked down at Bryan.

"Bryan, don't drink it. It's hot, let it cool down a bit" she said but Bryan showed her an empty cup.

"Huh, where did the tea go to?" Suzan asked

surprised that his cup is empty.

"I drank it all. I love hot meals best" Bryan replied disposing the cup.

Suzan nodded in shock this time, the tea was so hot.

But Dilly doesn't like hot meals? Where did he get that from? Suzie wondered.

She also disposed her cup after a while and they both went up to the roof top of the company.

"Wow! This place is cool, never knew such places existed around here" Bryan said then smiled at Suzan in appreciation for bringing him up there.

"It's okay. Just be careful please, I wouldn't want you falling down please" Suzan said to him.

She can't imagine what will happen if eventually Bryan falls down from there. Aside from probably getting arrested, Dilly might also hate her.

Damn! That part hurt the most. She can't imagine him getting so mad at her.

This part few days, things has been going really well for them. Dilly had taken her out on their first

official date. Outside the company they can act normal to each other but behave professionally in the company.

"Suzie, can I ask you something?" Bryan suddenly turned to Suzan then asked.

"Yeah shot" Suzan replied.

"My dad. Do you like him?" Bryan asked.

Suzan felt her heart beat more loudly three times. Her eyes widened.

"What??" She wanted to yell but it only came out as a whisper.

*\*Paris\**

Dillion kept kissing Shawna on her lips, her neck, her earlobe. He acted as if he has been hungry for all this for too long and he can no longer hold back himself.

Shawna was excited but wasn't comfortable at the same time.

We are in the car, aren't we? Kept ringing inside her head.

She tried telling him but it didn't look like he was going to listen.

She tilted her head backwards as he buried his teeth on her shoulder, grazing and smooching on her. The uncomfortable feelings started washing off, it started getting replaced by extreme pleasure.

She didn't even know when she took her left hand to his bare chest then started caressing him there taking that he was still on singlet.

Before you know it, Shawna was almost lying down flatly on the car seat and their romance was going to the next level. But the moments got cut short by a phone call.

Dillion ignored the call and let it ring to the end. The call came again and his phone started ringing, he let it ring to an end.

But when the call came for the third time, he was forced to stop.

He took out his phone to see that it was Naomi calling him. It angered him a little but he also knows that he is supposed to be there for her.

He picked the call up reluctantly.

"Hello Dillion. Where have you been? I've been calling but you keep ignoring my calls, why?" Naomi yelled equally frustrated from the other end.

"Where are you?" Dillion asked ignoring her yelling.

"I'm at the airport and I need you or someone else here for me. Why on Earth...."

"Naomi. I'll send someone to you" he interrupted her, replied then ended the call.

He doesn't have enough patience to listen to tantrums.

Next he called someone and sent the person to go pick her up from the airport before turning to look at Shawna.

"Seems it all ends here. We'll leave now" Dillion said. Shawna nodded unable to say a word again.

She felt disappointed. The heat in between her legs is still there but she adjusted herself very well.

They both drove home in silence. Originally Dillion wasn't the type that talks too much so it was a

normal thing to him but not to Shawna.

Shawna expected the drive to be lively. She opened her mouth to start up a conversation most times but later closed her mouth. Seems the shyness in her hasn't left her.

They got home but Dillion was surprised to see Naomi standing at the entrance with her hands at akimbo. She looked like she just came back from a fight.

How did she get here on time? Dillion wondered.

He parked in the garage then they both came down.

Naomi already prepared words in her mouth for Dillion, well expect Dillion shuts her up again then she's going to say her mind.

Naomi kept looking, waiting for Dillion to approach her.

But she got surprised to see Dillion coming out from the parking lot side with Shawna by his side. Like their bodies touched at intervals.

Naomi popped her head forward to be sure that she

is seeing correctly. Dillion so close and relaxed with his s\*x slave. How possible is that?

Did something happen between them? How come they are suddenly so close? She thought.

Dillon noticed the way she stared at them both - in disbelief. Dillion then wanted to prove to her that it's actually real.

He wrapped one of his hands around Shawna's shoulder thereby pulling her closer to him. It surprised Shawna but shocked Naomi.

Okay. I think my brother is drunk, she concluded in her mind still watching them get closer.

.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 38-39

•  
© Blessing..

•  
(Old times)

Writer's POV

\*Mexico\*

Suzan after staring at Bryan for a while moved closer to him and squatted eye level with him.

"Bryan, you're too young for all this" said Suzan calmly.

Bryan remained quite, he stared at her keenly waiting to hear her answer.

"But..yeah, I love your dad the way a woman loves a man but unfortunately...I don't think he feels that way about me, I think he is just being nice to me because you probably like me" Suzan answered truthfully.

Bryan's brows perked together as he heard that last part.



"What? Why are you frowning?" Suzan asked.

"It's not right for me to admit but you're better than my mom. So, I'm on your team" Bryan revealed earning a surprised smile from Suzan.

"Y..." Suzan was about to say but got interrupted.

"Bryan!!" They both heard Dilly's voice and turned towards the entrance to see him.

Suzan stood straight as she watched Dilly approach them.

"Come here buddy. It's time to go home, I know I wasted a lot of time. I'm so sorry about that. I'm doing this against tomorrow because I won't be coming to work tomorrow" Dilly said to Bryan as he carried him up in an embrace.

"It's okay, you're forgiven" Bryan replied earning a side smile from Dilly. He then took his eyes to Suzan who stood staring at them both.

"Um...Suzan?" He called.

Suzan smiled, inwardly hoping that Bryan doesn't tell his dad whatever they discussed. She won't be

able to really face him if he finds out that she really loves him.

"Will you be chanced to go out with Bryan and I tomorrow?" He asked, Suzan's mouth dropped open in both surprise and happiness.

**\*\*Paris\*\***

"Naomi" Dillion called calmly when they had gotten close enough to her.

Naomi blinked her eyes and tried ignoring Shawna.

She moved towards Dillon and hugged him tightly, lightly pushing Shawna away.

Shawna on her own doesn't want Naomi's mouth, she went into the mansion leaving them both immediately.

Naomi used the opportunity to sniff in the scent of his body, she wanted to confirm if he was really drunk.

But she didn't perceive the scent of an alcohol to her surprise.

"Naomi, you're choking me. Get your hands off me"

Dillon hushed at her.

She disengaged from him and straightened her dress, temporarily forgetting that she is supposed to yell at him for ignoring her calls.

"Have you seen Sam?" Dillon asked knowing that they have a good relationship together.

"No, I just arrived. Haven't gone inside, decided to wait here for you" Naomi replied the thought of sam filling her head.

"Good. You should see him" Dillon said walking pass her as he strode into the sitting room.

"I know, I'll go see him now but Dillon..." Naomi replied walking right behind him.

"how did luwis end up dying, I'm curious?" Naomi asked making him pause.

The memories of that day filled his head again but he couldn't tell Naomi.

"Go see Sam. He needs someone there for me" came his reply after the long pause.

Naomi sighed already used to her brothers acting

like that. It made her recall Bryan again.

She smiled.

The men of Mark's family are all alike, she thought as she walked to sam's personal room in the mansion.

She got to the door and knocked on it. She didn't wait for an answer to come before fixing her hand around the door knob and unlocking it. She pushed the door open to see Sam there lying down on the bed shirtless.

She closed the door behind her and walked up to him realizing that she had woken him up from his sleep.

Sam turned to see Naomi approaching the bed.

"Naomi?" He called.

"Is that you?"

Naomi smiled at him as she climbed the bed and lie next to him on the bed, she adjusted properly and placed one hand across his chest just like the old times when they were still very little.

"Yes, it's me Sam" answered Naomi. She was happy to see him.

"When...when did you get back?" Sam asked tilting his head to have a clearer look at her.

"Minutes ago."

"I've missed you" she added sincerely ignoring the fact that she has always pushed him away.

Sam chuckled a little and it's the first since Luwis died.

"Really? I never expected you to be so blunt about it" said sam.

He pulled her closer into his arms, she relaxed.

"Yeah" she mouthed and a little silence stepped in.

"Sam, I'm so sorry about Luwis. I never expected that such thing will ever happen to him" she cooed.

"It's okay. Why are you apologizing to me? He was also your friend" said sam.

"Was. He was. If I had known, I could have been more closer to him - to you guys like before. I never

should have drifted away" said Naomi in a tone of regret.

"Yeah. If I had also known, I could have tied him up in a room, even if he ends up hating me. At least its better than having him died" sam said.

"How did he die?" Naomi asked.

"He planned his death, that's the worst of it" replied sam not wanting to tell her the full details.

"That's horrible, why will he plan his own death? He left you so empty" supported Naomi.

"Well...yeah, but I think I'll be okay now that you're back to your real self and you're also here with me" replied sam.

He tilted his head to watch Naomi's reaction.

She had an unreadable expression for a while before she finally sighed.

"Yeah" she mumbled.

"Do you still like him?" Sam couldn't help but ask.

"Who?" Naomi asked.

"Your brother's friend" supplied Sam.

"Yeah, I do but that doesn't matter now, does it?"  
Naomi replied climbing completely on top of Sam.

She hugged him. He hugged her back.

Just like old times....

.

(Arrival)

Writer's POV

\*The next day.\*

"Dad, where did you say Shawna went to?"

Valentina walked into her dad's room to ask after Shawna for the tenth time.

"I told you she ran away, she ran away. I didn't send her anywhere" her father responded to her harshly.

Valentina couldn't believe what her dad responded her with, she couldn't believe Shawna could just run away.

"Did you do something to her? Punish her in anyway?" She asked accepting the fact that if

anything at all, her father was at fault.

Her dad frowned deeply at her.

"Why do you concern yourself with some girl? Let's go please" her twin sister Tine walked into the room and chipped in.

"But...."

"Valentina you don't question me again. Leave with your sister right away" her father interrupted her words yelling.

"Ok" she turned and followed Tine out.

They boarded a cab which took them to the estate they were heading to. Actually heading to Dillon's parent mansion.

\*

"Woah woah! The old building still looks beautiful" Andrew said walking into the sitting room of the mansion.

Dillon just stood at the middle of the stairs with his hands at akimbo staring at Andrew as he talked and looked around.



After minutes of looking around, Andrew finally got to Dillon on the stairs.

"Welcome Andrew" Andrew said to himself in a sarcastic tone. Dillon got it.

"Yeah, welcome Andrew. So what are you doing here? How long are you gonna spend here too?" Dillon asked him simply.

"Woah man! I just got here, won't you at least give me a welcome hug or say welcome? When are you gonna change this your grumpy attitude?" Andrew mocked Dillon and just then his eyes met Shawna's who was climbing down the stairs too.

Shawna paused on seeing him with Dillon, she never expected to bump into Dillon. They haven't even seen each other after she left him with Naomi.

She suddenly felt shy recalling the previous day incident. She folded her lips in.

Dillon noticed Andrew's eyes, he traced it to where Shawna stood behind them.

"She's still alive?" Andrew asked Dillon in a quite

tone before smiling at Shawna.

Shawna started moving towards them after minutes of stopping.

She got closer to them then paused again, Dillon eyes were on her all through.

"Um...Shawna...Shawna? I'm I correct?" Andrew asked taking her hand.

"Yes, you're correct" Shawna replied a little bit bashful because of Dillon's continuous stares.

Andrew took Shawna's hand up to his lips and kissed her there, noticing that, it triggered Dillon to look at Andrew.

He stared at what Andrew was doing.

"Hey! What are you doing? You should go up to fourth room on your left, I had the maids clean it up for you" Dillon hushed at Andrew, pushing him away from Shawna altogether, It surprised Andrew.

"Hold on, weren't you the one delaying me all these while? Why are you getting angry? I should be the one getting angry" Andrew frowned at the way

Dillon suddenly reacted before leaving.

"See you shawna" he didn't forget to wave before leaving.

Shawna folded her lips in again getting more shy because she was left alone with Dillon.

Dillon didn't say a word to her, he just kept staring at her shy expression. He stared at her like it was the first time for him to see her.

Shawna became so uncomfortable at the silence then decided to greet him and walk away. She might end up fainting due to her fast beating chest if he continues staring at her that way.

"Good morning" she greeted and continued walking down the stairs but didn't go far before Dillon grabbed her and pulled her back to him with a strong force. She almost missed her step on the stairs.

"Next time, you don't acknowledge other guys before me" he said.

She stared at him with her mouth slightly opened.

He wrapped his hands around her waist and pulled her much more closer, close enough that her breast was pressing hard against his chest.

She continued staring at him like she hasn't seen him before either. Blinked at intervals due to his actions.

"And your lips looks more sexier this morning" he added leaning closer for a kiss but shawna moved her head backwards because she saw Naomi with the corner of her eyes staring at them.

"What? You don't want me to kiss you?" Dillon asked.

Shawna tried telling him about Naomi with her eyes but it seems like he doesn't wanna understand the sign or he probably choose not to understand.

Dillon removed one of his hands from her waist and took it to the back of her neck so she won't be able to move her head back again.

Then he moved closer and kissed her.

Naomi who was coming out from sam's room and going to the kitchen to get him some milk had to

stop at the end of the staircase to stare at what Dillon and Shawna was doing in disbelief.

He's not drunk this morning again is he?

No, my brother doesn't seems like he enjoys strong drinks in the morning. Then is he acting romantic with her because he probably likes her? She wondered watching Dillon smooch Shawna's lips.

Shawna finally regained her freedom from Dillon's grabs after he was done kissing her.

She wanted to frown at him because he went ahead to kiss her without her full approval but she ended up blushing.

She turned fully to the direction of the stairs where Naomi stood. When Naomi knew that she has already caught staring at them, she started descending down the stairs.

When she got to them she stopped.

"I wasn't watching" she said then continued going down.

When she finally got to the beginning of the stairs,

the front door opened revealing the twins.

They had also been there before so they were familiar with the mansion.

Naomi saw them first.

"Huh, what are you two grown up bit\*hes doing here? I'm sure you both weren't invited" Naomi frowned at them both folding her arms.

"You little rat! Stop calling us bit\*hes, we are not your mate ok?" Valentine fired at her really pissed off by Naomi's attitude.

Tina just ignored the both of them to find the stairs that will lead her up to Dillon's room. She has really missed him.

She got to where Naomi stood and her eyes met with that of Dillon's. A smile crept up her face but quickly died down when she saw the other familiar eyes looking down at her.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 40-42

.

© Blessing..

.

(Surprised)

Writer's POV

Shawna after hearing some voices from the door wondered who the owners of the voice might be.

When a familiar smiling face appeared, her eyes widened in shock and disbelief.

Isn't that Valentina? Or am I mistaken? She wondered still staring at the once smiling face. She also stared back at her in shock.

Valentina told herself that the lady standing beside Dillon might not be Shawna.

How will Shawna end up here of all places? She

wondered.

Maybe it's just her look alike.

She started climbing the stairs ignoring Naomi and her twin sister as they bicker between themselves.

She got to Dillon who was obviously staring at her in surprise and smiled again at him softly.

She quickly embraced him too but was quick to disengage from the hug to avoid embarrassment from Dillon side. She hasn't forgotten how he behaves.

"Hi Dillon" she waved her hand at him.

"What are you doing here?" Dillon asked with a straight face.

She smiled not bothered by his unwelcoming attitude then took her eyes to the lady who looks so much like her step sister.

"Hi" she also waved at him concluding that she might be his cousin or anyone. Because she also knows a lady of no statue and meaning can't stand that close to him.



Shawna didn't reply her. She just kept staring at her which made Val to also stare back at her.

"Valentina?" Finally came out from Shawna's mouth. Dillon turned to look at Shawna wondering how Shawna knew her.

Tina's eyes widened on realizing that she was actually Shawna. She wasn't Shawna's look alike but was the real Shawna.

"Shawna?" Tina also called with a cringe leaving Dillon in a confused state.

Both Shawna and Tina stared at themselves for a long time.

"Wow! What are you doing here? It's been so long" Tina asked.

"Yeah, it's been" Shawna answered.

"I didn't expect to see you here. How come you're here?" Tina asked again.

It made Shawna recall how her dad actually sold her out to a s\*x house. Her mood darkened on the recalling the hurtful memory.

"I just happen to be here" Shawna answered, her head down.

Dillon turned fully to Shawna. She is gonna have to explain how she knew Valentina later.

"Shaw" he called.

She raised her head up a bit to stare at him.

"Will see you later" he said in order for her to leave.

Shawna turned to look at Tina who couldn't stop staring at her for the last time before she walked up back to her room.

"Now, what are you really doing here?" Dillon turned to Tina then asked again.

"I..."

"You have broken up with me, haven't you?" Dillon quickly added.

Tina held herself from getting affected by his harsh words. Instead, she smiled.

"It doesn't mean we can't continue being friends. We started from being friends, didn't we?" She

answered him.

"You don't have to be here Tina. You weren't invited" stated Dillon.

"Well then send me back then, I'll walk out of that door once you personally ask me to go back" said tina.

Dillon just stared at her for a while without uttering a word.

"Ok then, I'll take that as a welcome" said tina.

"Whatever, just suite yourself but make sure you don't disturb me" Dillon stated coldly before leaving her there.

Her twin after minutes of bickering with Naomi finally climbed up the stairs to meet her.

"That brat is really getting on my nerves. If not for the fact that Dilly is her elder brother swears I could have taught her a terrible lesson she'll never forget to tell her grandkids" fumed Valentine.

Valentina who hasn't been listening to her sighed.

"Shawna is here" she said.

Tine's face showed that she doesn't understand what her sister just said.

"Shawna, our step sister is here" Tina explained again.

"Which Shawna? I don't still get" asked Tine really confused.

"I've told you. Our step sister dummy, our step sister" Tina half yelled at her annoyed that Tine wasn't understanding.

Just when she continued her explanation to Tine was when Ma'am Sandra showed up and happened to hear Tina say that Shawna is their step sister.

It surprised ma'am Sandra but she also knows about Shawna's story.

She climbed the stairs and walked pass them both to Dillon's room. She got to the door then knocked on it.

"You can come in" Dillon reply came.

She opened the door then walked up to him. He was standing in front of his closet searching for the

clothes he was gonna change into after showering.

"Child?" She called. Dillon turned to spare her a glance before he continued what he was doing.

"Who are those girls on the staircase? Seems as if I've seen them before" Ma'am Sandra inquired.

"Yeah, you have. Valentine and Valentina. Valentina is my ex, she came here once before" Dillon explained.

"Oh! That explained why they looked a bit familiar" ma'am Sandra nodded in understanding.

"But, where are you going? Aren't you gonna have breakfast with your friends then?" Asked ma'am Sandra.

"I have somewhere to be, but I'll return real quick" answered Dillon still searching through his closet and checking out the perfect wears to go out with.

"I think I'll have to shop for new dress" he mumbled not looking satisfied by what he has. He picked out the once he considers okay after some time then walked to the bed there.

He kept his clothes there then pulled off his shirt in order to take his bath. He also pulled off his trousers then made for the bathroom but was stopped by ma'am Sandra's voice.

"Do you also know that those girls are Shawna's step sister?" She asked making Dillon turn to look at her in surprise.

"Step sisters?" He found himself asking for confirmation that he heard her clearly.

.

.

(Past)

Writer's POV

Few minutes later, after bathing. Dillon dressed up quickly in order to go out, but before also stepping out. He wants to meet with Shawna and confirm what ma'am Sandra had told him. Throughout the time in the bathroom, he kept thinking about what ma'am Sandra told him.

After dressing up, he went out from his room and

started heading towards Shawna's room.

Shawna sat down on top of her bed in remembrance. She has been reminded of her past. And she doesn't like her past.

She recalled the way her step father could also end up taking his frustration on her wherever he loses a bet because he is good at betting than actually working. Shawna at some point started praying for him to start winning his bet and also stop drinking. Because those two occasions mostly warrant serious beating. Although she doesn't have bruises, she always get serious heavy, she has always treated her wounds neatly. She hated seeing marks on her skin.

Shawna sighed bitterly at the thought.

She had never imagined to see her step sisters here. She never expected them to even be close with someone like Dillon.

To her, although Dillon didn't really welcome her well, but for the fact Tina actually behaved like they are close. That reason burned her and her thoughts.

I aren't supposed to feel this well but I can't help it. I don't know why, but I feel things might not remain the same for me again, Shawna thought seriously.

She was still deep in thought when Dillon got to her room then opened it, he got in to read her facial expression.

What is she thinking? Dillon wondered walking close to her on the bed. It was until Dillon stood facing her that she noticed that someone was actually in the room with her.

On seeing Dillon, she flinched a little out of fear.

One of Dillon's hands was on his waist and he kept staring at her.

She stood up on her feet immediately.

"I..um...I.. didn't notice you. I'm sorry for that"  
Shawna apologized.

"What is it?" Dillon asked her.

Shawna became confused. She wondered why he was asking her that sort of question.

"What is it?" He asked her for the second time.



"No... nothing" Shawna answered taking her eyes to the floor.

"Come here" he coed wanting to hug her. That sudden action surprised Shawna but she went into his arms immediately to sniff in his heavy cologne.

He smells so nice and looks dressed to go out. She wondered where he was heading out to.

\*

Valentina and her twin after exploring the mansion. Valentina decided to go inquire the reason why Shawna ran away like her father had told her. She also wanted to know how Shawna ended up with Dillon, how she ended up in the mansion.

Could she seriously be working here as a maid? Maybe so, Dillon employed a lot of maids because the mansion is a big one.

They don't actually venture into most part of the mansion, the mansion has dozen of rooms too.

Well....I think she is one of the maids here, Tina concluded in her mind.

When she had explained well to Tine and Tine had understood her. Tine had told her that Shawna might be close to one of the maids here and had probably followed the maids to come work in the mansion. The thought that Shawna might even be working there didn't cross her mind.

Valentina got stranded as she does not know where Shawna stayed.

Probably the servants quarter, she thought then went to meet a maid there. The maid informed her that Shawna actually stays in the main mansion, she had told her how many rooms to pass before getting to her room.

Tina thanked the maid then took the stairs to go look for Shawna in her room.

She counted as she was told to count and finally got to the door on the right.

Tina could hear voices coming out from the room and the door wasn't even properly closed. It was a bit open.

Shawna recognized the two voices that spoke at

once as Dillon's and Shawna's. She then looked into the room through the opening on the door to see Dillon actually hugging Shawna.

It made her expression change to that of a shocked person. She leaned in again, slightly pushed the door open to be sure and really confirmed that she wasn't hallucinating or hearing wrongly.

That made her mind flash back to the moment on the staircase. She had actually met them standing at a very close range.

Dillon being this close with a lady like Shawna? She gasped as the realization dawned on her.

A lady like Shawna can't be close to him without Dillon probably liking her or she might be there as his s\*x slave. She had heard rumours that Dillon might actually have one, both involves having sexual intercourse.

She didn't know when she scoffed then leaned on the door a bit more, by doing so the door opened forcefully. She realized herself and before Dillon and Shawna could notice her she left the door,

started walking away hastily.

She prayed none of them comes after her because she isn't in the mood to explain herself to anyone. The shock has sunk into her whole body.

And luckily for her, one of the doors by the left opened revealing Andrew. Andrew had told her he was coming down to Paris so she wasn't that surprised on seeing him there.

Without thinking twice, she went into his room and shut the room after pulling him in as well.

Her actions surprised but as well excited Andrew.

But his excitement died down when he saw her acting like she couldn't control her emotions. Like she's someone on the edge of crying or breaking down totally.

"Hey, what is it?" Andrew asked but when he didn't get a reply from her, his mind reminded him that they were in Dilly and Dillon's parent mansion. The only possible reason she could be like this is Dillon.

"Come on Tina, you still haven't gotten completely

over Dillon till now. You'll just continue hurting yourself if you continue having feelings for him. Stop loving him, there are other guys there for you. You are really beautiful, others guys can actually do anything for you to look their side."

"...And am one of them" he cooed.

Tina looked up at him then concluded that Andrew wasn't helping but adding more problems to her.

She made to walk out from the room but Andrew held her back, he leaned closer to her.

"I'll prove it to you in anyway, that even if Dillon doesn't want you, their are other guys that wants you" he added before placing his lips on hers..

.

.

(Glares)

Writer's POV

"So, what really happened? How did you end up being their step sisters?" Dillon asked as he sat her down.

Shawna sniffed in then dried the fresh tears coming down from her eyes as she set to narrate things to Dillon.

"I...My mom got married to her dad after the dismiss of my dad. That was how I ended up becoming their step sisters" explained Shawna.

"Like when did that happen exactly?" Dillon asked trying to know if it's already happened before he met both Tine and Tine.

"Well...it's been long, when I was still a kid" Shawna supplied.

So, its happened before I met the twins and I've never heard of such from them, Dillon wondered.

"Their father....? Now that I think of it, I think their father treated me so well by selling me out to the sex house. I never knew he was tryna end my sufferings for me, because I met you. I think it's a great thing" she sniffed in again really trying to hold back the tears trying to pour from her eyes.

She laughed with tears again then made to clean her tears. She took her thumb to her face but Dillon

held her back.

He brought her hand down from her eyes.

"There are sometimes when you just need to cry, stop trying to hold them back. You can go ahead" Dillon said to the surprise of Shawna.

She was trying to hold herself so she wouldn't cry in front of him. Tho it's not the first but she wouldn't want him to take her as a soft person that cries everytime. She has realized Dillon actually needs a strong person but oops...

...she couldn't hide the fact that she is who she is.

She let her tears spill from her eyes immediately Dillon said that.

He held her close in an embrace and she released more tears.

"As you have said, that man actually did a good thing. Dilly also did a good thing by getting you out from sex house. But you did the best thing by not letting what happened consume you."

"I've also hurt you...."

A silence stepped in.

"I don't intend on apologizing because the gravity of what I did deserves more than an apology so I won't apologize. I'll just do the right thing at the right time..."

"Because you don't deserve those people that have caused you pain in one way or the other to be close to you, they'll only remind you about the hurtful things they've done to you" he said the last part silently.

Shawna didn't quite understand what he was saying but his warm embrace was consoling. She tightened her grip on him wetting the shirt he was putting on with her tears.

\*Minutes later\*

After successfully putting Shawna to bed, Dillon was finally able to leave her room but damn, the time is far spent. There was no way the person he was meeting up with could still be waiting for him till now.

He checked his phone, he unlocked it to see 21



missed calls.

I'll just reschedule, he thought then started walking to his room in order to change his clothes.

He got to the front of his door to see the other twin Valentine.

He slowed down his pace on seeing her lingering around. It made him recall the time he was hugging Shawna, someone had actually been watching them.

"Dillon" Tine called.

Dillon kept staring at her, giving her a go ahead with whatever shit she wanna say but make it quick cause I've gat no time.

"Hi" she waved. For the fact that Dillon and his brother Dilly look like one person was not fun at all to her. Their resemblance is just too much.

"Um...I just came to greet you. And aside that, I heard Dilly has a son. I don't know if it's true, you're the only one I can confirm the news with" said Tine nervously.

"You're staying with him over there. Why ask me? If

you don't know then how am I supposed to know?" Dillon asked with a hint of sarcasm in his voice. Without further questions, he opened the door then walked into his room.

\*4 hours later\*

Dillon got interrupted from his thinking. He's plan, his much awaited revenge is just next week.

The bastard he has been waiting for is gonna be coming in next week and with the news he's heard from his spies. The old man is always heavily guarded.

Old cargo, you'll be shocked to be greeted with your death on your home coming, Dillon thought.

This actual revenge has been holding him back from a lot of things. He has a lot of things he has to work out but the revenge plan has been the only thing holding him back since he was little.

He only got free from his own thoughts when Andrew appeared.

"You know that little kid really behaves like you guys,

mostly you. Tho he doesn't entirely resemble you guys but he's really handsome. Dilly is kept lucky, he is got such a smart kid for a son" Andrew said sitting few meters away from Dillon on his bed.

"Kid?" Dillon was forced to think.

He recalled that truly Dilly had told him that he have a son and had even sent the boy's pictures to him. He just didn't recall to check the little guy out.

"Yup kid. I was really shocked to witness the drama I witnessed on the day Dilly got him away from his oppressing mom. That lady is a wild bit\*h. You won't believe Dilly actually had her locked up after she revealed a lot of lies about him and the company. He got really angry then, he locked her up but not for long. I guess because she's his son's mother" Andrew explained further.

"Who is she? How did they meet?" Dillon asked.

"Well, I think it's better Dilly himself explain things to you, I'm sure that girl...what's her name again?"

"Shaw..Shawna right?" Andrew asked trying to remember her name.

Dillon glared hard at him as he tried to recall Shawna's name.

"I think she's better..."

"Don't compare her with any lady, Andrew. Don't!" Dillon cut Andrew up sharply making Andrew swallow down his remaining words down his throat.

"It's confirmed then. You have feelings for that Shawna girl right? I was just trying to find out. Thank goodness I found out on time to avoid more glaring from you, I'll also inform all the securities you have not to speak to her or get close to her, I'll inform Dilly right away too. Infact I'm posting this on the internet" Andrew said quickly bringing out his phone.

Dillon's glares on him only got more intense.

TBC.

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 43-45

.

© Blessing..

.

(Red)

Writer's POV

\*Mexico\*

Dilly opened the door of his car and held it so that Bryan and Suzan could get in, they got into the car then he closed the door. He turned then got into the driver's side.

He doesn't want a driver driving them, he wanted it to just be only the three of them.

He started the vehicle and drove all the way to a very expensive restaurant. He could occasionally stare through the mirror to see Suzan and Bryan at the back seat chatting.

Each time he does that and sees them chatting seriously without even recalling that he was also in the same car with them, it made him smile.

For someone like Bryan to really like Suzan is something. He could remember that he didn't quit

like Naomi at the beginning but everything turned cool after sometimes.

After driving for what seems like an hour, he pulled up inside the restaurant garage.

He then came down, before he could even make an effort to open the door for Bryan and Suzan, they already got out themselves.

"Woah! This restaurant is so big! I love it here"  
Bryan said smiling at Suzan who held he's tiny hand very well. She held him like someone who is afraid that he could disappear from her side if care is not taken.

"I'm glad you love it here Bryan, come on, let's go in"  
Dilly beckoned.

Bryan gave Dilly his hand to hold and he held it.  
Bryan looked up at Suzan and smiled at her again.

Suzan didn't really understand the reason behind the smile until they walked inside the fancy restaurant. It looked so cool and richly organized.

A waitress ran to them immediately.

"Good morning sir. Good morning ma'am. Hi there cutie" the waitress greeted with a huge smile on her face as she recognized Dilly.

"Please, allow me to take you one of the VIP section, it's designed especially for family such as yours, sir" she said softly.

On hearing that, Suzan took her eyes to the floor silently praying she's not all red.



Geez! How could she mistake me to be his wife?  
She wondered.

"Thanks for the offer, but I already reserved a table"  
Dilly told her frankly.

"Ok sir" the waitress smiled again before leaving.

Another waiter who knew about Dilly's coming and  
has been expecting them ran to them immediately.

"Sir, this way please" the waiter said then took them  
to another VIP room there that Dilly had reserved  
the previous day.

It was when they sat down that Bryan looked at  
Suzan to notice her red face. He didn't quite  
understand why her face is red so he decided to ask

out of concern.

"Suzie, your face is red. Why is that?" Bryan asked pointing to her blushed cheeks.

Suzan opened her mouth to talk but ended up recalling the waitress again, she blushed even more which made her feel so embarrassed.

"I...um...I.." she glanced at Dilly in hope he isn't listening to them but was surprised to see a smirk on his face.

Oh goodness! She mentally slapped herself.

How stupid? How stupid? She scolded herself.

"Let her be Bryan. It's can happen" Dilly answered

the question for her. It didn't pass Suzan's notice that when he said that, he's smirk grew wider and it was as if he was enjoying what was happening to her.

She thanked the lord when the door to the VIP room opened and a waitress accompanied by another pushed in their starter.

**\*\*Paris\*\***

"So, how did you end up here?" Valentina asked Shawna.

They had bumped into each other on the hallway, valentina took the opportunity to ask her.

"What did your father say to you when you asked about my whereabouts?" Shawna replied her with

another question.

Shawna's attitude surprised Tina a bit but she didn't show it.

"He said you ran out from the house and never returned. I wanna know why" Tina answered.

"Since he already said that, will you believe me if I say that he lied?" Shawna asked.

Valentina paused for a few seconds before turning fully to face Shawna.

"I'm listening" she said.

Shawna also paused for a few seconds before answering her.

"Your father, he sold me to a sex house after losing a huge amount of bet. He decided to replace the money by selling me" Shawna answered.

"What??" Tina found herself shrieking.

"Father did that??" She asked.

"Yes. Your father did that. Why are you surprised? He could send you guys off to college but won't allow me step out from the house. He could beat me as if I'm not a human each time he gets drunk or losses a bet. My only meal became Noddles, scars on my body. Why are you surprised?" Shawna asked her heart raising. She felt so pained recalling the past.

Tina didn't reply. She took her eyes to the floor in shame.

"I'm sorry" she apologized.

"If your next question is perhaps how I ended up here. I suppose you should know by now that girls sold into the house don't remain there. They get sold out, that is how I ended up here."

"But do you know that I'm glad he sold me out? I'm so happy, when you go back. Don't forget to thank him for me because selling me out was actually changing my life. He changed my life by giving me a new home."

"Yes, I resented him when he did that but....I've forgiven him. Tell that to him."

"You shouldn't feel sorry yourself, you didn't do anything wrong. I'm happy to see that you're doing quit well, you and your sister. Send my regards to

your elder brother too" Shawna concluded then stood up from where she sat and left.

She walked outside to exhale deeply.

That was tough, especially acting that way. She calmed herself down before going to look for either ma'am or Beatrice.

\*

Naomi who had always been in Sam's room walked out to go take a shower in her room.

She walked steadily through the corridor, she ran into Andrew who was just coming out from Dillon's room. He had a funny look on.

Naomi's eyes widened and she ran and hugged him.

"Hey, baby girl. How're you doing?" Andrew asked.

"I'm doing good. You're here? When did you arrive? I want us to go out together" Naomi said.

"Very early this morning. Maybe tomorrow" replied Andrew.

Naomi nodded her head freeing him from her hold.

"You're just coming out from my brother's room. Is he in?" Naomi inquired.

"Um...yeah, he is" Andrew drew his replies.

Naomi heard footsteps behind her, they sounded



distant tho.

She turned to see someone that looked like Sam at the far end of the corridor walking away.

.

.

Writer's POV

\*Mexico\*

Few minutes into their course meal. A waitress walked into the VIP room of Dilly.

"Sir, would you allow me to take your son for a few seconds? For a VIP personnel like yourself sir, we

are giving out free gifts, but instead of handing you what we prepared for people like you. We'll hand over the gift to your son, sir. What do you think?" The waitress spoke politely.

Dilly looked at Bryan who was also staring at the waitress. He has an excited look on.

"What gift is that? A toy machine?" Bryan asked the waitress.

The waitress smiled at him.

"It's a surprise" she answered.

"You wanna go Bryan?" Dilly asked.

"Yes, it won't hurt. It's a gift, I don't usually receive

gifts" Bryan said trying to get down from his sit but it was difficult for him getting down.

Dilly pulled Bryan's sit closer to his side, then helped him down.

"Alright, go on but don't waist time or your meal will get cold. You know you don't like cold meals" Dilly said to him.

"Yeah I'll" Bryan replied back walking towards the waitress.

"Bring him back" Dilly said to the waitress.

"Of course sir" the waitress smiled and tried holding Bryan's hand but Bryan folded his hands together.

"I'm sorry, let's just go. Don't like strangers touching" he said then started walking out from the room.

The waitress chuckled surprised at Bryan's act. She followed him out.

She walked behind him as she kept directing him to the elevator they were heading to.

Just when they were about getting into the elevator that will take them up. Rita, Bryan's mother appeared from nowhere and grabbed hold of Bryan.

Bryan was startled at first, he pulled away from Rita's grips, before turning to see her.

"Who are you ma'am? Please don't touch him" the waitress said to Rita blocking her from reaching

Bryan.

"I'm his mother" Rita hissed then hit her head with the bag with her.

She hit her again and again, the waitress tried returning the beating but Rita was faster and smarter.

She kicked her down then pulled her into the elevator. She closed the elevator and the elevator started taking the waitress away.

She turned back to Bryan who was really scared. He has always been scared of her.

"Please mom...I'm sorry, please don't hurt me"  
Bryan pleaded moving away from her.

"You are such an ungrateful child. Aren't you supposed to be grateful that I didn't abort you when you were still in my damned womb. But because your met Dilly you now forgot about me, huh!? Huh!" She shrieked at Bryan.

"I'm sorry" Bryan could only apologize. He doesn't really understand all the words she spilled from her mouth. She went to him and tried carrying him but he resisted.

"No, leave me. I don't wanna live with you anymore. I don't wanna go with you" Bryan cried out but Rita was way too stronger than him.

"Shut up! You are my son! I'm your mother, you should be with me. You fu\*ked up all my plans you damn kid. Your father is worthless too" Rita hushed.

"Dad! Suzan, please help me!!" Bryan only screamed

the more as he struggled with her in her arms.

She wanted to leave the floor so Dilly won't find her there. She has come up with another plan and in order for the plan to work out, Bryan must be with her.

"Help me Dad!! She's taking me away!" Bryan continued crying out.

Inside the VIP room, Suzan was the first to hear a kid voice screaming for help.

She looked at Dilly.

"I hear a kid voice outside" Suzan said.

Immediately, she thought that Bryan might be in

trouble flashed into Dilly's head.

He immediately stood up and rushed out followed by Suzan.

They both rushed out to the corridor, they continued hearing Bryan's voice. They started tracing the voice, they traced it to a room.

When they got into the room, securities already filled the room. Rita was still holding Bryan.

Dilly saw Rita holding Bryan with deadly glares.

"You bit\*h! What do you want again?" Dilly groaned getting so angry.

'Sir, is he your son? We think that lady is possessed'



the securities leader who was pointing a gun at Rita said.

"Put your guns down, I'll kill her myself" Dilly replied through gritted teeth. He walked pass them to where Rita stood.

He took Bryan away from her then handed Bryan to Suzan who was right behind him. He's hand found Rita's neck, the urge to end her life was too much and that was what he wanted to do without thinking twice about it.

He started choking life out of her.

"Sir, stop! We've called the police already, let the police handle her" the securities kept saying.

Suzan hide Bryan's face on her chest so that Bryan

won't watch what Dilly was doing to Rita.

Dilly wasn't hearing at all, he's hold on her neck only tightened.

"I'm fed up with you, with your attitude towards your own son" Dilly hissed out to Rita.

"You...bastard...how...." Rita's words choked as she tried speaking.

"Stop!" Suzan said from behind.

"You'll kill her. Stop!" Suzan touched Dilly's shoulder and tried pulling him away from Rita but he didn't let bulge.

"I want her to die. That's what am trying to do" Dilly

hushed.

"The cops are around sir. Leave her now" the securities said from behind.

"Dad....please stop, don't hurt her" Bryan who was able to steal a glance at them said.

"Dilly you have to stop!!" Suzan yelled at him with all her might and for the first time called him by his name.

By now Rita's eyes were closing and she wasn't really struggling much, life was leaving her.

Dilly finally let go of Rita immediately after Bryan's pleading and Suzan's screaming into his head.

"I'm sorry. I..I just lost control of myself few seconds ago" Dilly apologized to both Bryan and Suzan. They were both crying by now.

Rita coughed seriously on the floor trying to catch her breath. The police came into the room and went to pick her up at the securities direction.

Dilly carried Bryan from Suzan after calming down a bit.

He apologized again.

"I'm sorry".

\*Paris\*

"Valentine let's go home, it's of no use. Didn't you

listen to me at all? Dad actually sold Shawna like a property? I want to confront him. Staying here won't help us at all, we have to go" Tina said.

"No! How can you believe that bitch over your own father Tina?" Valentine screamed at Tina.

"I want to confirm it. Let's go home now. Even Dillion's doesn't want me. We aren't needed here" Tina replied her sis.

"What about the plans? We planned that we were going to get you back to Dillon. He already promised not to leave you. It's an unbreakable promise, let's do it" Tine insisted.

"I don't want to do it anymore. Dillon doesn't love me, he doesn't even like me at all. The unbreakable promise can't hold him either because what you don't know is the promise already got broken the

moment I ended things with him. That day at the club, the day I left him at the club, that was the time everything really ended. It won't work on him Tine, let's just go" Tina explained.

"Well, you can go. I'll come later, I still need to see that bitch" Tine replied folding her arms.

Before Tina could utter any other word, Tine left the room and it just happened that Andrew was standing outside the door.

He got in then closed the door immediately Tine left.

"You're leaving?" Andrew asked ignoring all the other confusing part he heard them talk about.

Tina ruffled her hair and then sat down.

"Yes" she replied.

"That means your giving up on Dillon right?" Andrew asked sitting beside her.

"Look Andrew. I'm so confused right now, please don't start" Tina responded.

"You can lean on me Tina. I'll always be here for you no matter what, as friends or as lovers" Andrew coed.

Tina sighed then placed her head on his shoulder.

"She's stubborn" Tina muttered.

Andrew chuckled, his hand going over her neck.

"She has always been" Andrew mumbled in reply.

\*

Naomi walked inside Sam's room after bathing to see him putting on his clothes.

"There is something fishy going on in this mansion lately. And I think it's those evils bit\*hes, while heading here. I heard them screaming at each other, it could be so much nice and fun if they're both away. I don't like them" Naomi said.

Sam finished buttoning up his last button then picked up his phone from the bed.

"Where are you going?" She asked her hands at akimbo.



"I'm going to the underground house. Our operation is next week, I need a lot of training" Sam replied walking pass her.

Naomi held him back.

"Why? So suddenly? I thought we were going to spend time together till I go back" Naomi asked.

"I need to train Naomi. It's very important" sam replied.

"But before I left to bath, you didn't show sighs of going somewhere. Why suddenly? Why....." she was still asking when she remembered seeing someone that looked like him leaving when she was with Andrew.

"Oh! I know why. You want to run away from me

right? Do you even remember that I'll be turning 18 soon, you want to leave? Aren't you supposed to be with me?" She frowned.

Sam exhaled.

"You're a hard nut to crack, Naomi. Don't force me. I do remember your birthday ok?" Sam replied then tried leaving again.

"Andrew, he doesn't like me. He just takes me as a kid sister, Sam, but that doesn't make me stop crushing on him. I'm sorry if that hurts you. I..I just see you as a best friend, nothing more than that" said Naomi.

Sam sighed again on hearing that.

"I know, you don't have to explain" he mouthed then

left.

**\*\*Few hours later\*\***

Valentine traced Shawna to her room. She knocked aggressively on her door. Anger filled her whole system.

First she doesn't believe her father sold her. She feels that Shawna got her way into the mansion through being bit\*hy. Second she's angry that Tina is giving up without trying.

How am I supposed to get through to Dilly if this plan fails? She thought angrily as she banged on Shawna's door forgetting that, she wasn't in her father's house.

The door opened and Shawna appeared. She has

just gotten back inside to wee and then go back downstairs to continue her chat with few of the maids who aren't aggressive to her.

Shawna was still in the toilet when she heard loud bangs on the door she she hurried out to open the door. She saw Tine then frowned.

"This isn't your father's house Valentina. You have no right to hit on the door that way" Shawna said to her

Valentine pushed the door then got in fully. She stood at the center of the room in rage.

"I see that you've really grown wings. You've learnt how to use your pussy well, huh!?"

"But let me tell you. Tina was literally Dillon's first

love. Tina opened up Dillon's cold heart and as you have heard, first love never dies. Even tho Dillon got used to your pussy, it doesn't mean that he'll keep enjoying it forever."

"He is only attracted to your wild pussy. Get that into your damned skull" Tine snapped at her.

"Are you done?" Shawna asked holding back the tears that were about to spill from her eyes.

Valentine got shocked by Shawna's simple reply. She expected her words to infuriate her, she wanted Shawna to try attacking her.

"Are you done?" Shawna asked again.

"You....! Bitch, how dare you?" Tine cussed then walked to closer to her.

"Has he ever confessed his undying love for you? Don't get ahead of yourself so you won't end up like your dead parents. They...."

"Out! Now!! And never return" Tina got interrupted by a harsh voice at the door.

She turned to see Dillon and he was looking more than angry.

She clamped her mouth shut, glared at Shawna again before storming out.

Dillon walked up to Shawna. He took her hands.

"You could have just slapped her. Don't let people temper over you again, she's your age mate. You could have done something to make shut her

sucker mouth" Dillon said.

Shawna didn't reply him. It was as if she was thinking about Tine's words.

Slowly, she pulled her hands away from Dillon's then went and sat down on the bed.

Dillon who was a bit confused by her reaction decided to still calm her down.

He went and sat down beside her on the bed.

"What is it?" Dillon asked.

Shawna didn't reply. She kept staring at the floor as tears filled her tear duct.

"Shaw? What is it?" Dillon asked again trying to sound as cool as possible.

He took his hand to her face and then raised her chin up a bit, in that way, their eyes met.

"Do you....Do you have feelings for me? I wanna know cause I really love you" Shawna finally blurted out the question she was trying to swallow down her throat.

TBC ..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 46-47

.



© Blessing..

.

(Dillon)

Writer's POV

Silence took over for a long period of time as the question sink into Dillon's head. He never expected such question from Shawna. Hell! He never even expected her to reveal that she loves him. As far as he's concerned right now, Shawna shouldn't love him.

He didn't even want to hear it. At least not now.

He kept staring at her blankly, his eyes becoming cold.

Shawna saw this and started regretting her actions.

"I am sorry for asking you. You don't have to answer" Shawna quickly apologized taking her face away from him.

I think I've really crossed my boundaries. Why didn't you keep holding the question from spilling from you mouth, Shawna? Shawna scolded herself.

"Shawna" Dillon called after a long while.

"I'm sorry" she mumbled again afraid to look at him. She is scared that with that look on his face, he might return to being hard on her.

"Look at me" Dillon demanded. She looked at him.

"I'm not mad at you. I'm just taken by surprise at your question and....."

"There you are child, there are some of your boys outside the building, I don't know what they want" ma'am Sandra bursted into the open room to reveal.

"Boys?" Dillon asked standing up.

"Yes, they are here to see you as I've heard" ma'am Sandra replied.

"Ok, thanks " Dillon said then spared Shawna a glance before walking out from her room.

Shawna exhaled, but sad and relived.

\*\*\*

Days passed.

After Dillon left Shawna's room, Shawna didn't get

see him again that day and the following day. She had gone in search of him but he wasn't always around.

Shawna became worried but always became relieved because she knows Dillon can't just get into trouble and remain there. He always finds his way out.

But what is he doing that I can't even see him even for a few minutes? Shawna wondered as the third day passed. The fourth day passed and before you know it, the week is gone.

\*

Shawna's eyes opened when she felt someone's eyes on hers. She stared with her half closed sleepy eye at the male figure staring down at her on the bed.

She rubbed her eyes then finally sat up to see...

...to see Dillon, sited beside her bed and patiently waiting for her to wake up.

"Dillon??" Shawna was forced to call and it was the

first time calling him by his name.

"I mean...I'm sorry" she immediately apologized not sure he likes what she called him.

"Hi princess. You're finally awake" Dillon shocked her with his responds as he stood up on his feet.

Her eyes widened as she stared up at him.

"....And its okay, you can call me by my name" he added pulling the chair back.

Shawna's eyes remained wide in shock.

What is with this new sudden Dillon? Did he just call me a princess? Shawna thought, her cheeks reddening.

"Come on, get up. I've been waiting for you" Dillon cooed pulling Shawna up from the bed.

"I'm gonna be spending the whole of today with you, so be ready for me" Dillon said as he continued pulling her to the bathroom side.

Shawna kept following him, she doesn't understand how Dillon changes.

For days she hasn't been seeing him, now here he is, trying to act all different.

They got into the bathroom there, Dillon took out her paste and toothbrush, he handed it over to her.

"Brush, be quick" he said.

Shawna could only nodded. She started brushing and few minutes later she was done.

She turned to look to ask a question but he didn't let her words come out.

He collected the brush from her, he kept it then started taking off her night gown.

Shawna flinched a bit, forgetting that he was actually Dillon who had seen her naked already. She moved back a bit.

Dillon snickered.

"I told you to get ready for me, didn't I?" He asked.

"Take off your clothes, have your bath" he said.

Shawna nodded at the last minute. She started doing as told and before you know it, she was

standing starked naked before him.

"The shower, you should know the next thing to do right? Or should I help you?" Dillon asked as Shawna stared at him as if expecting him to tell her how to shower.

Sudden excitement filled Shawna's system. She didn't even know when she nodded with her lips folded.

"Alright then" Dillon said walking pass her.

"You are bathing with the shower" he turned it on then pulled her to stand beneath the shower. Water drenched Shawna's body, water also got into Shawna's eyes.

She shook her head trying to wipe her eyes with her palm in order to see well. Dillon on noticing what happened, took his thumbs to her face, he then palmed her face for her.

He removed his hand, she opened her eyes and both of their eyes locked.

Shawna started feeling heat in between her legs.

She has come to know the meaning of that heat she often feels for him. It meant that she was getting turned on, it meant that she wanted his hands on her.

Shawna unconsciously took her hand to his, she pulled him closer to her making the water from the shower also wet him.

"Shawna, what are you doing?" The question spilled from Dillon's lips.

Shawna just kept staring at him as she took his hands to his shoulder and left it there. Dillon immediately got her message.

"No, I didn't plan for it so early, I planned for this later tonight" Dillon refused.

"We can always do it many times" words came out from Shawna's lips before she could control herself.

Dillon saw the desire in her eyes, she was on for him. That made him happy.

"Ok, but it won't take time" he cooed then brushed her lips with his for a few seconds. He didn't wanna

waste much time but he couldn't help but want to suck from her wet middle sized breast.

With the urge kicking in, he took his lips down to her nipples then took one of em into his mouth.

The effect of his mouth meeting with her nipple send wave of pleasure through her whole body. Her legs shook on the floor, she was forced to move back a bit or she might fall. Her back landed on the bathroom wall as Dillon took pleasure from her boobs.

As he did that, one of his hand went down steadily to her pussy. He's hand continuously rubbed her clit adding more pleasure to Shawna.

Shawna couldn't help the loud deep moan that escaped her throat.

.

.

(Bad bi\*ch)

Writer's POV

Shawna felt un intense gaze on her, even in her



sleep she could feel that.

She started opening her eyes slowly, the events of last night flashing back into her memory.

Her cheeks heated up immediately at the reminder. She had s\*x with Dillon and she can't remember how many rounds they went. Was it four? Was it five?

She finally opened her eyes to see a familiar loving face.

She looked at him with so much love. He was sited beside her bed and was just staring at her as she slept, just like yesterday.

"Good morning" she greeted sitting up.

"Hey, how was your night?" Dillon asked.

"It's was..." Shawna felt pains all over her body, especially in between her legs. She felt so sore but she can't tell him that.

"...sweet" she said with a blush.

"I'm glad you're finally up, been waiting for you to wake up" Dillon said standing up and walking over

to the tray of food on the table. He returned with the tray of food and then placed it beside her on the bed.

"Here is breakfast, hurry up. Brush your teeth then come and eat, you must be hungry" he said with an unusually calm tone.

Shawna only nodded. She did as instructed and soon she was back. When she came back, she didn't find Dillon there.

It worried her a bit but she let the feeling wash off.

She settled down to her meal of bacon, cheese and milk. She hasn't gone far into the meal when Dillon showed up again.

He sat down beside her on the bed making her pause her meal.

"Um...I'm gonna be going somewhere after dropping you off and...you probably...yeah probably, won't be able to see me around for a while, maybe one week at most. After one week if I don't return then...ma'am Sandra is gonna be handing something over to you, just take it and you'll be fine ok?" Dillon said softly.

Shawna nodded. Although she doesn't quite understand him but she still has to agree.

He pecked her on the forehead before standing up.

"Be quick, so we can leave" he added before stepping out again.

\*

The ride back to the mansion was quiet. Shawna could feel that something was wrong. She doesn't know it but Dillon's actions proved it.

She decided to ask but then swallowed back the question when a call came into his phone. It seems to be his twin brother on the line.

They talked about things, she didn't pay attention to their conversation. She doesn't want to do something that might annoy him at all.

They got to the mansion without exchanging much words. The maids helped carry everything Dillon had bought for her into her room while she stood waiting for Dillon to leave.

After unpacking everything from his booth. Dillon

walked up to her then kissed her slightly on the lips. Shawna doesn't understand why she was suddenly scared, why she felt so uncomfortable. Even the kiss doesn't taste as sweet as it should taste. She was quick to pull out from the kiss.

"Where are you going? I'm just concerned, you don't have to pick offense with my words" she asked.

"I'm just going to the underground house. Have something to do there, see you" Dillon replied as he took steps back.

He paused after opening his car then added "I'll miss you" before getting in. He then drove out from the compound leaving Shawna more worried.

She doesn't understand why her heart kept misbehaving, it kept beating fast as if something wrong was about happening.

There is no big deal right? Why is my body reacting this way? She worried as she strode into the mansion.

The first person she went to meet was ma'am Sandra.

The pills, especially the one of pain relieve is almost finished. She needed another one from ma'am Sandra so she could take it.

\*Mexico\*

"Dillon, can't you forget him? Its been more than 15 years now. I'm sure you'll be killing an old man now, leave him, he is close to his death anyways. I don't know why you wanna risk a lot of things for him" Dilly spoke into the phone to his brother as he watched Suzan set the breakfast.

"I aren't telling you so you'll advise me against it. I'm just telling you for family sake. Keep your f\*\*ked up advise to self" Dillon groaned at him.

"Ok cool. See you in heaven in case you don't make it" Dilly answered back a little bit annoyed.

Dillon just doesn't listen. Whatever he sets he's mind on, he'll do it. One character he took from their dead father.

"Anything the matter?" Dilly heard a sweet voice ask him.

He lifted his head to see Suzan.

"No, nothing. Every time is cool" he answered walking up to her at the table.

He kissed her slightly on the lips before sitting down.

Now, Suzan isn't just a secretary to him. He has realized how much he needed her, he needed her in every area of his life. He likes her a lot, that one he is sure of it.

And Bryan also really likes her, he then decided to ask her out and date for some some weeks. He'll get to know her more for those weeks before he proceeds to the next official thing. And that is asking her to be his wife.

Bryan ran down the stairs, he lifted his phone to them.

He showed the phone to Dilly with a worried look on his face. There was someone on the line.

"Hello? Bryan I'm talking to you. Bryan?? Bryan hell answer me!" The voice of Rita kept booming out

from the speaker.

Bryan collected the phone then placed it on his ears.

"Rita, I'll see you later today. I'm gonna pay you off for the last time and you'll leave Bryan alone forever" Dilly said through gritted teeth.

"Ok fine. Come with a lot of money and..."

Dilly disconnected the call with his teeth tightly joined together. Bryan had pleaded with him not to allow her remain with the police and he had bailed her out.

"Bad bit\*h!!" Dilly gritted out

\*Paris\*

Dillon arrived the underground house. He entered to see some of his boys, both the ones who personally work for him and the ones who he just paid for the job tomorrow, packing all the equipment they were gonna use into different trucks.

After tomorrow, they'll be no more boys whatsoever. He'll have to dismiss the ones that comes out alive and live like he always wanted, that's if he comes

out alive too.

"Continue with the training, leave the weapons. Time is no longer on our side. Our target will be coming into the county in matter of hours" Dillon said walking towards them.

.

TBC..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 48-50

.



© Blessing..

.

(Bad bi\*ch)

Writer's POV

Shawna felt un intense gaze on her, even in her sleep she could feel that.

She started opening her eyes slowly, the events of last night flashing back into her memory.

Her cheeks heated up immediately at the reminder. She had s\*x with Dillon and she can't remember how many rounds they went. Was it four? Was it

five?

She finally opened her eyes to see a familiar loving face.

She looked at him with so much love. He was sited beside her bed and was just staring at her as she slept, just like yesterday.

"Good morning" she greeted sitting up.

"Hey, how was your night?" Dillon asked.

"It's was..." Shawna felt pains all over her body, especially in between her legs. She felt so sore but she can't tell him that.

"...sweet" she said with a blush.

"I'm glad you're finally up, been waiting for you to wake up" Dillon said standing up and walking over to the tray of food on the table. He returned with the tray of food and then placed it beside her on the bed.

"Here is breakfast, hurry up. Brush your teeth then come and eat, you must be hungry" he said with an unusually calm tone.

Shawna only nodded. She did as instructed and soon she was back. When she came back, she didn't find Dillon there.

It worried her a bit but she let the feeling wash off.

She settled down to her meal of bacon, cheese and milk. She hasn't gone far into the meal when Dillon showed up again.

He sat down beside her on the bed making her pause her meal.

"Um...I'm gonna be going somewhere after dropping you off and...you probably...yeah probably, won't be able to see me around for a while, maybe one week at most. After one week if I don't return then...ma'am Sandra is gonna be handing something over to you, just take it and you'll be fine ok?" Dillon said softly.

Shawna nodded. Although she doesn't quite understand him but she still has to agree.

He pecked her on the forehead before standing up.

"Be quick, so we can leave" he added before stepping out again.

\*

The ride back to the mansion was quiet. Shawna could feel that something was wrong. She doesn't know it but Dillon's actions proved it.

She decided to ask but then swallowed back the question when a call came into his phone. It seems to be his twin brother on the line.

They talked about things, she didn't pay attention to their conversation. She doesn't wanna do something that might annoy him at all.

They got to the mansion without exchanging much words. The maids helped carry everything Dillon had bought for her into her room while she stood waiting for Dillon to leave.

After unpacking everything from his booth. Dillon walked up to her then kissed her slightly on the lips. Shawna doesn't understand why she was suddenly scared, why she felt so uncomfortable. Even the kiss doesn't taste as sweet as it should taste. She was quick to pull out from the kiss.

"Where are you going? I'm just concerned, you don't have to pick offense with my words" she asked.

"I'm just going to the underground house. Have something to do there, see you" Dillon replied as he took steps back.

He paused after opening his car then added "I'll miss you" before getting in. He then drove out from the compound leaving Shawna more worried.

She doesn't understand why her heart kept

misbehaving, it kept beating fast as if something wrong was about happening.

There is no big deal right? Why is my body reacting this way? She worried as she strode into the mansion.

The first person she went to meet was ma'am Sandra.

The pills, especially the one of pain relieve is almost finished. She needed another one from ma'am Sandra so she could take it.

\*Mexico\*

"Dillon, can't you forget him? Its been more than 15 years now. I'm sure you'll be killing an old man now, leave him, he is close to his death anyways. I don't

know why you wanna risk a lot of things for him"  
Dilly spoke into the phone to his brother as he  
watched Suzan set the breakfast.

"I aren't telling you so you'll advise me against it. I'm  
just telling you for family sake. Keep your f\*\*ked up  
advise to self" Dillon groaned at him.

"Ok cool. See you in heaven in case you don't make  
it" Dilly answered back a little bit annoyed.

Dillon just doesn't listen. Whatever he sets he's  
mind on, he'll do it. One character he took from their  
dead father.

"Anything the matter?" Dilly heard a sweet voice ask  
him.

He lifted his head to see Suzan.



"No, nothing. Every time is cool" he answered walking up to her at the table.

He kissed her slightly on the lips before sitting down.

Now, Suzan isn't just a secretary to him. He has realized how much he needed her, he needed her in every area of his life. He likes her a lot, that one he is sure of it.

And Bryan also really likes her, he then decided to ask her out and date for some some weeks. He'll get to know her more for those weeks before he proceeds to the next official thing. And that is asking her to be his wife.

Bryan ran down the stairs, he lifted his phone to them.

He showed the phone to Dilly with a worried look on his face. There was someone on the line.

"Hello? Bryan I'm talking to you. Bryan?? Bryan hell answer me!" The voice of Rita kept booming out from the speaker.

Bryan collected the phone then placed it on his ears.

"Rita, I'll see you later today. I'm gonna pay you off for the last time and you'll leave Bryan alone forever" Dilly said through gritted teeth.

"Ok fine. Come with a lot of money and..."

Dilly disconnected the call with his teeth tightly joined together. Bryan had pleaded with him not to allow her remain with the police and he had bailed

her out.

"Bad bit\*h!!" Dilly gritted out

\*Paris\*

Dillon arrived the underground house. He entered to see some of his boys, both the ones who personally work for him and the ones who he just paid for the job tomorrow, packing all the equipment they were gonna use into different trucks.

After tomorrow, they'll be no more boys whats oever. He'll have to dismiss the ones that comes out alive and live like he always wanted, that's if he comes out alive too.

"Continue with the training, leave the weapons. Time is no longer on our side. Our target will be

coming into the county in matter of hours" Dillon said walking towards them.

.

.

(The execution)

Writer's POV

\*Mexico\*

Dilly parked in front of Rita's apartment. He got into the gate, he walked straight to her door, he lifted his hand to knock on her door so she could open up. He doesn't wanna spend more than 5 minutes there.

"The poor guy doesn't even know that he isn't his son" he heard someone voice that sounded like that of Rita's mom say.

"Well, all my plan got ruined, I'll leave him with Bryan for now. After Bryan might have turned into a man and is probably controlling part of their family's company, I'll show up to him again. Thinking about it, that's a good plan" he heard Rita reply.

"I'm surprised that as smart as that guy is, he hasn't run a DNA test on Bryan. That's even shocking" he heard Rita's mom say.

"That's for the best mother. Isn't he here yet? He should bring us some money, I wanna fly to paris right away" Rita said walking to the door.

She opened the door to check around for Dilly but was shocked to the bones to see him standing right

outside the door.

She gasped and started taking steps back.

"What did you just say?" Dilly asked doubting that he really heard them right.

"No... nothing, co...come in...and be..."

"I won't ask you again bi\*ch!!" Dilly rasped.

Rita turned to stare at her mom who was also shocked.

"You..heard us wrong. Bryan is your son ok? He Is your son" Rita gasped out her reply. Her hand on her neck protectively.

"Did you just say that Bryan isn't my son?" Dilly asked walking in.

"He is, he is your son. I promise that he is your....."

She stopped talking when Dilly got close to her.

"I'll kill you and then I'll kill your stupid mother too if you lie to me again" Dilly threatened.

"Um..ok. He is not your son, but since you love him. You can take him, I don't even know his father at all. He is a result of a one night stand I had at a bar" Rita revealed.

"No, it's not possible" Dilly after hearing her revelation said.

He started moving back.

"Stay here the both of you. You are really going to rot in jail if what you said is true. I'm really going to end you two" Dilly said rushing out of the compound in a haste.

He's mind was everywhere.

How can a DNA lie? DNA in three different hospitals showed that Bryan has his DNA. So how come? What is Rita saying? He thought as he drove all the way to the first hospital he performed the DNA test.

*\*Paris\**

Dillon sat in a private room with Sam. A cigarette fixed in between his lips. He puffed out smoke then looked up at Sam who was staring down at him.



"Sam, nothing must happen to you no matter what. Understood?" He said.

"Of course" Sam replied. He then added.

"And you too boss, you have to come out alive no matter what" sam said.

"I'll try" Dillon replied him fixing in the cigarette back into his mouth.

Naomi had earlier called Sam. She shouted on him at first for not calling her, but at the end of the call she calmed down and explained that she really really missed him. Even more than before and she can't wait to see him.

That alone had brought smiles to Sam's face. He

then promised her that he was gonna meet her soon but not today. Since then the determination to survive at all cost kicked into him.

And now, he is so sure that he is gonna survive no matter what. Because even death itself won't stop him from seeing Naomi.

**\*\*A month later\*\***

"Shawna, what is it?" Ma'am Sandra ran after her into the bathroom to ask.

Shawna released all the content in her mouth into the toilet. She washed her mouth clean after that then turned to look at Ma'am Sandra.

"I don't know. I'm scared" she answered then embraced ma'am Sandra there in the bathroom.

"When is he coming back? It's been a month now? When is he coming back?" She asked ma'am Sandra tearfully.

"Um...I don't know. But let's talk about you now. How are you feeling? You have vomited thrice this morning" she asked leading Shawna out from the bathroom.

"Yes, I just feel feverish and really sick. I think I'm like this because I miss him" shawna replied.

"Oh feverish? And you always been feeling sick every morning right?" Ma'am Sandra asked.

"Yes" shawna confirmed.

Ma'am Sandra placed her hands on her waist.

"After meeting with him, did you take all the pills I gave you?" Ma'am Sandra asked.

"Um...yes or....I don't remember. But I can remember that I was so worried then, maybe I forget or maybe I took them" Shawna replied not really sure why ma'am Sandra is asking her all those questions.

"Show me where you put them" ma'am Sandra demanded.

Shawna walked up to the small locker table there, she pulled out the locker then presented all the medicine inside to ma'am Sandra. Ma'am Sandra looked at them then sighed.

"You really forgot to take it. Well, then you might be pregnant" ma'am announced.

Shawna's eyes widened.

"Pregnant??" She repeated after ma'am Sandra.

"Yes Shawna. But we'll run a test on you first to confirm it" ma'am Sandra replied.

"Oh goodness! How did this happen? So, I might be pregnant for Dillon? OMG! What should I do?" Shawna asked scared and shocked at the same time.

"If you're truly pregnant then you'll have to keep it" ma'am Sandra replied.

"But...but. .I'm still going to school, I'm still going to school" Shawna stuttered.

"Then you shouldn't have forgotten your pills. You'll have to push your schooling if the result comes out positive. Go and have your bath now, I'll escort you to the hospital" ma'am Sandra told her.

Shawna nodded with her body shaking as she walked back into the bathroom.

**\*\*Mexico\*\***

Dilly waited for Suzan patiently at the restaurant he had booked. Today, he is going to propose to her, he'll ask her to be his wife.

About the DNA result, the ones he is currently running is gonna be coming out anytime soon but he doesn't want that to change a thing. He still wants to get married to Suzan and he is proposing tonight.

His phone started running but he cut the call and kept his phone aside earnestly waiting for Suzan, nervously.

Just as Suzan stepped into the restaurant, his phone started ringing again.

He ignored the call, he stood up on his feet to welcome the smiling Suzan.

The call ended and just as Suzan sat down. The call came again, he had no choice but to pick it. Even Suzan was expecting him to pick the call.

"Hello" he said huskily into the phone.

"I'm speaking to Dilly Mark, I'm I right?" The voice came from the other end.

"Yeah, straight to the point please" Dilly fumed really annoyed.

"Ok, this is doctor Matthew" the caller revealed.

"Oh Matt, what is it?" Dilly asked.

"It's about your twin brother" Matthew revealed.

"What is it about him? Has he woken up yet?" Dilly asked.

"No, a worse situation happened" Matthew replied.

"What worse situation. Go straight to the point Doc" Dilly demanded.



"Ok, he went into a coma after having a seizure"  
Matthew revealed.

"A what?" Dilly asked standing up on his feet. Suzan also stood up surprised by his sudden reaction.

"Yeah, we've tried everything we could but still, he went into a coma" Matthew confirmed.

"When is he gonna wake up then?" Dilly asked his heart raising.

"Well, we don't know. He might die any day, he might wake any day. I've seen a lot of patients who wake up from their coma after 10 years. It depends, Dilly" Matthew answered.

"Christ" Dilly gasped, fear developing inside him. He was expecting Dillon to wake up not go into a coma.

"Ok, I'm coming over to Paris now. I'll come take him" Dilly said ending the call.

TBC..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 51-53

.

© Blessing..

.

(Four long years)

\*\*\*\*Four years later\*\*\*\*

Writer's POV

Dillon's eye lid started sliding back open, he started

returning back to the real world. He has been between life and death for four years and some months now.

The nurse who was cleaning him up saw his hand move. Her eyes widened and she ran out from the room Dillon was kept in.

Luckily, it was still very early and his twin brother was still getting ready for work.

"Sir!" the private nurse kept knocking and calling out to Dilly, her breathing erratic.

"What is it?" Dilly who was knotting his tie turned towards the door.

The nurse pushed the door open, she ran in then swallowed down her saliva.

"It's my patient, he is waking up. I just wanted to inform you" the nurse said and without wasting much time ran out back.

"What??" Suzan was the one that yelled from behind him.

"Your brother is awake?" She asked stepping out

from the bathroom with water dripping down her wet hair.

Dilly stood stunned still trying to process the news.

"Your brother is waking up honey, did you hear that?" Suzan came and shook Dilly.

"Yes yes" Dilly answered coming out from his trance. He took to the door and started going to the last room along the corridor where people hardly reach.

He got to the room to see the nurse slowly helping Dillon sit up. Dillon felt pain all over his body, his body felt so sore and he was wondering if that was really his body refusing him.

"Dillon" Dilly called in a gasped. He went and sat beside him on the bed.

"Is that you? Are you okay? Do you recognize me?" Dillon asked.

"What happened?" Dillon asked placing his hand on he's hurting head.

"A lot happened! A whole lot happened!" Dilly

breathed out in reply.

The door opened with Suzan also rushing in.

"Honey" she called going behind Dilly and taking a good look at her husband's identical twin.

Dillon's stared at Suzan a bit confused.

"Who is she?" Dillon asked.

"She? She's my wife, we got married two years ago" Dilly replied.

"Two what??" Dillon asked, alarmed.

"How long have I been like this?" Dillon asked.

"Well, four years and six months approximately" Dilly responded.

"What?? How is that possible? Was it not just yesterday that...." Dillon paused in remembrance of his last memory.

He and his boys had attacked the man responsible for murdering his mom and dad. It was a sneak attack and it was also an unexpected one so they were able to kill a lot of the opponent men. But

knowing how that man is, he is never alone, always with an army because of the numerous enemies he has made, most of this boys still got seriously injured. Only a few died and he was happy for that. But he got shot with a poisoned bullet and it's antidote was really rare. A rare poison made in china. Very rare to come by.

He succeeded in killing that man, his only son, his son's wife, he almost even killed his grand kids but withdrew himself. He killed them all in the most painful way.

But during all these time, the poison kept spreading through his body because he received the bullet from the door. It had hit from behind - expectedly.

He could recount that Sam was also saved, he sustained only light injury, he helped take those dead bodies to the mortuary. Dillon went to the hospital to get himself treated after he was sure that the rest were getting treatment. The poison being really slow at spreading started weakening him as he got close to the hospital.

He got operated on, most of the poison were extracted from his system and he was given an antibiotic.

But because of the numerous wounds he has formally sustained, his body went into shock and the last thing he can remember is doctors rushing into his ward.

"Dillon, there is nothing like yesterday. It's been four years, I think I should call Matthew and have him fly over to come help you" Dilly said going out from the room to take his phone.

Dillon sighed not really believing that he has been in coma for 4 straight years, almost five....

The nurse tried massaging him but he pushed her off.

"Leave me" he waved her off.

"She is a nurse and is probably helping to straighten your weak bones, your joints and...." Suzan tried saying but kept shut immediately Dillon gave her a hard glare.

\*The next day\*

Dillon leaned so weakly on the wall beside his bed. Andrew, Matthew, Dilly and even Bryan were there with him.

Matthew kept examining his body.

"Can you move your leg? Try moving it" Matthew requested. Dillon tried it but it was very difficult moving his leg.

"You are gonna have to start moving about from now on. You are gonna get him some crutches to aid in his movement, Dilly" he referred the last words to Dilly.

"Don't over stress yourself, I'll be here with you for a month tho. I think in a month time you'll be able to get back your whole body" Matthew said closing up his box which contained all types of medical equipment.

"It's good to have you back Dillon. It's really good, you fought hard" Matthew touched him on his shoulder.



"I'll get going now" Matthew added before leaving.

Suzan came in after Matthew had left with a six months old baby.

Dillon kept staring at Suzan and the baby.

"Who's kid is that?" Dillon asked.

"Oh she? She's mine. You should know Dillon, I told you that I'm married" Dilly responded to him.

Dillon sighed in tiredness, he then closed his eyes and remembered Shawna.

He had also remembered her the previous day but doesn't even know who to ask about her.

"Guy, are you alright now? Hope you recognize me tho. You haven't even spared me a glance since I got here" Andrew said.

Dillon spared him a glance but then rolled his eyes at him.

"Can you connect me to ma'am Sandra? I need to speak with her" he requested.

"Bryan, go get the telephone" Dilly turned to Bryan

and instructed.

Bryan nodded then left to get the telephone.

"Where is Naomi?" Dillon asked.

"She? She is currently on her way here with her finance, she has been in Mexico and is only coming back here because of you" Andrew replied him.

"Finance? What finance are you speaking of?" Dillon asked.

"You'll see them both when they get here. The world won't wait for you, would it?" Dilly responded.

The statement annoyed Dillon but he let it slide.

Bryan returned back with the phone and handed it over to him.

"And who is he? Is he your son too?" Dillon asked collecting the phone from Bryan.

Dilly didn't reply him, he just kept quite at that and pretended not to hear him.

"What's the landline again? Goodness I can't even remember some things" Dillon gressed out.

"You have been asleep for long. Why won't you forget a lot?"

"Look at your hair, it's so long now" Andrew responded him.

Dilly collected the telephone from him. He dialed in the landline to their family's mansion at Mexico.

Someone picked the call then connected ma'am Sandra.

Dilly then hand the phone back to Dillon.

"Hello" Dillon breathed out into the phone.

"Hello? Hold on, who's voice am I hearing? Is this Dillon?" Ma'am Sandra asked.

"Yeah. Has it truly been four years since you heard my voice last?" Dillon asked for confirmation. He wasn't really trusting his brother.

His brother might be playing a prank on him.

"Yes child. Goodness! We have all been waiting for you. Even your son has been waiting for you back here" ma'am Sandra said.

"What son??" Dillon asked in total confusion.

.

.

(Lewiston)

Writer's POV

"What son? I don't understand" Dillon said into the phone again, his eyes running from Dilly to Andrew.

"You'll find out once you get here child. Be quick about it" came ma'am Sandra's reply.

The line went off before Dillon could ask any other question.

He dropped the telephone and tried standing up but his body refused.

"Fu\*k!" He groaned resting his back on the wall again.

"What son is she talking about?" Dillon asked staring at Dilly.

"Well, I think that girl, what's her name again?" Andrew tried responding.

"Shawna" Dillon gave the answer.

"I heard you freed her, I think she got pregnant for you."

"Yeah" Dilly replied, then added "when you're better, you should find out yourself".

"Bryan, take your sister to her room. Go play with her there" Dilly said to Bryan.

"Ok, come here Ellie" Bryan said gently taking Ellie - Dilly's baby girl. Then he left with her.

Dilly went and then sat down beside Dillon on the bed afterwards.

"Dillon, I've been waiting for years now to tell you this" Dilly started.

"Um...Bryan, is not actually my own son but yours" Dilly said.

"Now I have two grown up sons. Wow! That's really shocking" Dillon said sarcastically.

Dilly ignored him then continued.

"I found out that I'm not the one who actually

impregnated his mother but...I have the same DNA with him. Well, after all the investigation. It all resulted that you are actually his real father, my DNA with him came out 98% while yours came out 99%. I don't really understand how all this misunderstanding came on, but have you known any lady by the name Rita?" Dilly explained.

"No, I don't know any bit\*h by that name and I aren't the father of that boy. Since your DNA matches with him then his your son" Dillon argued.

"Fu\*k! Do you think I'm happy that I'm not his real father or what? You have to remember that Rita. You have to remember if you had anything with her at some point" Dilly half yelled.

"Hey, you don't yell at me ok? I don't know any bitch by the name Rita" Dillon groaned.

"And I aren't the father of that boy too."

"Ok, Rita actually said she doesn't know his real father either, further questioning. I got to know that she actually met the supposed guy she got pregnant for at Dullex bar, does that name ring a

bell now. You often go there years ago" Dilly replied him.

"Well....I don't know and if all these were to be true then I'm afraid I can't accept him. Nigga is your son, he remains yours" Dillon stated.

"It doesn't work that way Dillon. It doesn't" Dilly insisted.

"Look Dilly, I don't want him okay? He's your son and will also remain yours. Don't ever tell him any shit about what the f\*\*k\*ng results says."

"I bet he doesn't even like me as much as he loves you. Just forget about the results. Your DNA matches with him and that's all that matters" Dillon replied him.

"I can't seem to get my mind off it Dillon, no matter what, I can't help but imagine what will happen when Bryan eventually finds out that....even tho our DNA matches that I'm still not his real father" Dilly responded his tone going cold.

"What?? What did you just say dad? You're not my father?" Bryan who was secretly listening to their

conversation couldn't help but speak up.

Andrew and Susan who has been there the whole time turned towards the door to see Bryan there.

Dilly looked at him as well. He stood up on his feet slowly.

"Bryan, is not what you think ok?" Dilly tried denying.

"But that's what you just said. You said our DNA matches but I'm still not your son. Then that eventually means that...you are not my father"

Bryan said getting teary.

"Oh gosh! Bryan please, let me explain it to you"  
Dilly pleaded walking towards him.

"I wanna be alone for now, Dad. And don't look for me" Bryan sniffed in then ran out through the door.

Dillon shrugged his shoulder.

"You shouldn't have even said anything about it. It still won't change a thing. He's yours and I'll appreciate if you all will leave right now" Dillon cooed slowly lying down.

\*



Three weeks passed and Dillon was back on his feet.

He was so curious about Shawna and his mystery son.

He was dying to see them so he took his training seriously and now he is back on his feet.

He took their family's personal private jet back to paris.

He phoned ma'am Sandra on getting to paris.

Ma'am sandra informed him that Shawna and his supposed son were both staying in his formal penthouse.

Before Dillon left for his revenge, he willed a lot of money to Shawna. He gave all his shares at the hotel to her too so he isn't so shocked to learn that Shawna was actually staying at that penthouse.

He took off to the penthouse at once. Immediately he got to the penthouse he unlocked the door with his card and the card surprisedly opened the door.

There were no guards standing around the door

whatsoever and everything seems to have changed.

He pushed the door open and then got in.

"Mom, is that you?" He heard a tiny boyish voice ask from the inner room.

He started going tracing the voice slowly.

"Mom" he heard again but didn't bother responding.

He got to the place to see two boys of different ages sitting on the floor playing a toy game.

"Who are you mister?" The bigger boy there asked.

Dillon took a close look at him to see that the boy has no resemblance to either he or Shawna. He turned to the other boy to see a lot of resemblance.

This must be him.

"Why are you staring at me mister? Did you lose your way or something?" The boy whose voice he had heard from the door and who also looked a lot like him asked.

"No, I didn't lose my way, kid. I'm in the right place" Dillon answered.

"Look, my mom isn't interested in men ok? That's what she always tells all the men that comes to her. So mister, if you're here to try your luck on her then I'm afraid you're just wasting your time" the boy said sounding really rude and proud.

His attitude only made Dillon smile.

"Don't worry, I aren't here to try my luck on your mom. She's already mine" Dillon replied with the same proud look the boy has on.

The boy smirked then looked at the second boy.

"What's your name?" Dillon finally ask.

"Lewiston" the boy shrugged his tiny shoulders then answered.

"Hm...nice name. Where is your mom?" He asked.

"She? She's a manager here, go check her out in her office" Lewis replied.

Dillon smiled.

"Cool."

"I'll be right back kiddo, continue your game" Dillon

said walking back.

He got to the door to hear the other boy ask.

"You look a lot like him, Lewiston. Is he your father?"

He heard Lewiston's reply.

"I don't know. But it'll be interesting to know. Let's continue."

Dillon left the penthouse with a smile on his face.

Nervousness started kicking into him at the thought that he is gonna be seeing Shawna again.

What is gonna be her reaction? Who knows?

TBC..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 54-55

.

© Blessing..

.

(Do you like him?)

Writer's POV

"I..I didn't even imagine that I'll be seeing you today. I lost all hopes" Shawna cooed lifting her head from Dillon's.

She stood up. Dillon stood up with her.

"I think I'm done with work for today" Shawna smiled.

"Really? So where are you going to? Huh!" Dillon smirked.

"I'm gonna stay with you, together with Lewis. I want you two to get to know each other more" Shawna replied.

"Wait for me here, I'm coming" Shawna said then left the office.

Dillon kept looking around the office.

"The manager huh!? Good position but you'll be

changing your working place" Dillon said to no one in particular.

Soon, the door opened and Shawna popped her head in.

"Let's go" she stretched her hand out to him with beautiful smiles on her face.

He took it.

They both went up to the penthouse, Shawna opened the door. She called out to Lewis immediately.

Lewis and his friend came running to the door.

Shawna picked Lewis up from the floor, she

embraced and kissed him.

"Hi Bobby" she patted his friend's hair.

"Bobby...do you mind giving me some hours with Lewis please?" She smiled at the boy.

"Of course. Bye Lewis" the Bobby boy waved at Lewis then ran out.

"Mom" Lewis said rubbing his face on Shawna's chest.

"I was playing a game with him. You asked him out, I'm sad" Lewis said not noticing Dillon because he has been too focused on Shawna.

Dillon on his own just stood watching how close the



two were, the sight he saw was a happy one.

He couldn't help but smile.

"Lewis, I heard you've met him" Shawna said trying to make Lewis see Dillon.

"Who?" He finally lifted his head from Shawna's chest to see Dillon.

"This guy?" He pointed at Dillon. Dillon chuckled.

"He is not just this guy, Lewis. He is your father" Shawna introduced.

"Woah! Really? Bobby has a good eye I guess. Hi buddy" Lewis stuck out his hand for a handshake.

Shawna felt embarrassed at what Lewis did but Dillon couldn't help but laugh.

"Oh goodness! Is that how he is? It's cute, give em to me" Dillon said then took Lewis from her.

Shawna couldn't hide her embarrassment. She has always taught Lewis to be respectful but he's always this kind of boy even at his age. He could literally pick up fights with kids that are way older than he is, kids that could beat him.

He didn't even go to school because he was expelled for placing a gum on his classmates sit. The boy sat on his chair and when he made to stand up, he couldn't stand, when the teacher helped in pulling the boy up, his chair being light weighted followed the boy up.

The boy had bursted out crying in school thinking

that he'll live the rest of his life with the chair stuck to his butt.

Lewiston had laughed really hard at the boy's state. The school authority found out Lewis was the one responsible and he got expelled for two days.

He is just so stubborn, stubbornly smart.

Shawna sighed walking in fully to the sitting room.

"Woah, your hair is so long. I love it, it gives you that bad guy look" Lewis said touching Dillon's hair.

"Really? I was thinking of cutting it but since you love it, I'll leave it" Dillon smiled at him.

"Yooo!! Another thing is, I'm gonna show you to all

my classmate tomorrow. I have finally got a daddy!" Lewis hollered.

Dillon laughed again, taking him to go sit down.

"But where were you all these while? Why are you just coming now? Where you working all these while?" Lewis asked at once.

"Um..yeah, I was working. But now I'm back for you kid" Dillon answered sitting him down on his laps.

"And you're really handsome too dad. I think I got my looks from you, I'm so cute" Lewis said proudly.

Dillon laughed hard again.

"Goodness, who taught you all these at this age?"

Your mom did?" Dillon asked.

"No, I learnt it myself. I'm happy you're finally here. Mom always assured me you'll com" Lewis said burying his head on Dillon's chest.

Dillon hugged him back.

Shawna stood by a corner watching lewis and Dillon. She felt glad that at least Lewis loved Dillon.

That boy is really picky on who to play with. He likes a few and dislike a whole lot.

\*At night\*

"Cough..." Dillon coughed slightly walking into the room, Shawna was arranging the bed.

"Is he asleep?" Shawna turned to him then asked.

"Yeah, he finally fell asleep. He is so energetic, it was difficult putting him to sleep" Dillon answered standing behind Shawna.

"Maybe because you're the one with him, he is not so hard. He falls asleep easily with me tho" Shawna replied putting back the pillow.

"Really?" Dillon asked moving closer to her.

The manner in which he spoke sounded so erotic to the ear. Shawna had to turn and look at him.

A grin was plastered on his face.

"What?" Shawna couldn't help but ask.

"Have you visited the mansion?" She asked turning back to the bed, as if trying to avoid what she thinks is on Dillon's mind.

"Have you?" She asked again but didn't get a reply.

She turned to see Dillon standing dangerously close to her.

Dillon held her by the waist then pulled her much more closer that their bodies touched.

Shawna gasped.

"What are you...."

"You know I've really missed you" Dillon cooed. His hot breathe felt on Shawna's neck.

"Stop. I don't understand you" she said trying to pull away from him but he only ended up making her fall to the bed with him on top of her.

"Geez..you...!"

Shawna was shut up by a warm kiss.

The kiss lasted for some minutes before she pulled away from the kiss.

"Stop, look I'm not ready. I'm not ready for all these" she wanted to scream at him but her voice only came out as a whisper.



"Really?" Dillon asked his tongue sliding down her neck to her chest. She started feeling tingling feelings between her legs but she was still determined to push him away.

She still needed to punish him for going into a coma and leaving her all alone. She knows she can't punish him in many ways but she can definitely punish him in this way.

"I said I'm not ready. I...I have someone...."

She hasn't even finished spilling those words when Dillon suddenly jerked away from her as if she was some kind of unwanted spirit.

"What..? What did you just say?" He asked taking steps away from her.

Shawna sat up, she adjusted her night gown.

"You think I'll just sit around and continue waiting. I already have someone else, I'm free to have, aren't I?" Shawna replied.

"You do?" Dillon asked feeling really hurt.

"Yes, I have and he's name is Daniel. Tomorrow morning you'll see him here" Shawna replied, her gaze holding his.

And truly there is a guy named Daniel really likes her. He has been around her for a year now and she already thought on accepting him.

Dillon let out a sigh.

"Do you like him?" He asked her.

.

.

(He is back)

Writer's POV

"Do you like him?" He asked her.

Shawna stared at him for a while before replying.

"He is friendly, but the only man I think of when I have the chance to is you. The only thing I ask of is why did he leave me? Did I annoy him? What did I really do?"

"My mind always flashes back to the last day, the day you drove me back to the mansion from the penthouse. I always think of that day particularly. I try to remember what I did wrong that day but couldn't remember. You are the only man occupying my mind, but sadly...." she took her eyes down and continued.

"....I don't even know if that man ever loved me because he has never said so, I've never heard him look me in the eyes and say it" she took her eyes back up.

"Have you ever felt something for me before?" She asked.

Dillon continued staring at her, his mouth sealed as if there was a glue used on it.

"Have you?" She asked again.

"I need some time alone" was the only reply that Dillon gave her before leaving.

Shawna sighed sadly, she looked at the time on the wall clock. She decided to lie down and wait for him to return whenever he feels like but unfortunately he didn't return till the following morning.

A tiny hand pulled her own hand, she slid her eyes open.

"Someone is at the door mom, why aren't you waking up?" Lewis hands kept roaming her body still she sat up on the bed.

"Ouch, is it morning already?" She wondered.

"Where is your nanny?" She asked Lewis.

"In the kitchen" Lewis reply came.

"Has she prepared you for school?" Shawna asked again.

"Yes, as you can see, but, where is dad? I want him to be the one taking me to school. I want him to take me to school" Lewis said climbing the bed.

He removed her hand from her head to stare into her face.

"Where is he?" He asked peering into her eyes.

"I don't know. He left last night" Shawna answered getting down from the bed with Lewis in her arms.

"Just allow your nanny take you to school today" she said to him as she dropped him in the dining area.

"Morning Venessa" she greeted Lewis nanny.

"Oh morning miss, how are you doing? Hope you aren't sick?" The woman asked.

"No ma'am, I'm good. Who is at the door please?" Shawna asked.

"Oh, it's a young man. He is obviously here for you" replied Venessa.

"Ok thanks" she thanked then went inside. She washed her face, dried it then left to open the door. She opened the door to see Daniel.

Of course, he had told her he'll be coming today.

She closed the door behind her and took two steps out to talk to him.

"Hi Daniel" she greeted the already smiling daniel.

"Hi beauty, you look beautiful even in the morning"  
Daniel said.

Shawna laughed.

"Thanks" A pause stepped in.

"So....Daniel, there is actually an important thing I need to discuss with you" Shawna started.



"Go on, that's why I'm here remember" Daniel said.

"Ok..we were supposed to hang out yesterday, as in go on a date but you got hooked up."

"I..I'm sorry to say this but I don't think it can work because....Lewis dad, he's back, I'm really sorry."

Daniel's face fell at the unexpected news. Shawna kept apologizing until he left feeling so heart broken and disappointed.

Shawna stood outside for a long time staring at Daniel's faded shadow. She opened the door and made to go in but saw Dillon coming back.

She paused, she closed back the door to face him.

"Morning" she greeted folding her arms.

Dillon didn't reply her greetings. He just decided to go straight to the point.

"Ok listen Shawna. It's really hard for me, it's been so hard for me to express my feelings to someone. I can't do it, I don't know how to express verbally. But that doesn't mean that I don't love you, well..things didn't start well but along the line I started developing feelings for you but I wasn't still sure of myself."

"I tried holding myself back too, I tried convincing myself that I don't love you but the pleasure I derive from you, well now that everything is over. I understand if you've moved on too but can I just stay around? At least be around my son" he asked.

"You truly suck at confession. If I were to hear this

from someone else, I'd laugh at the person and then push him away but...I just ended every relationships that was about to develop between daniel and I. I still love you, stupid me. I still can't forget you maybe because you are my first."

"I'll be your first and last then, agreed?" Dillon asked taking her hands into his.

"Hm...that depends on how you treat me from now on. Where did you go to? I waited for you last night" Shawna asked.

"Well...I was around" Dillon replied pulling her closer to himself.

"Where is lewiston?" He asked his mouth around her neck area.

"Well, he is with...." Shawna stopped talking because of the way Dillon kissed her on the neck.

"With his nanny" she completed.

Dillon kept kissing and licking her neck to her chest. He pinched her nipples slightly through the soft fabric.

"Tell me" he hushed into her ears.

"Have you had s\*x with another man? I won't be angry tho, you are also a human" he hushed.

"Why don't you find out by yourself later,huh!?" Shawna replied releasing hot breathes into the air.

"Mom?" The door opened. Shawna pushed Dillon

away from her.

"Dad! You are here? Finally, you are the one taking me to school" Lewiston hollered and ran to Dillon's side.

Dillon carried him from the floor. He kissed his cheek and his forehead.

"Your wish is my command my prince. So, where is this your school located?" Dillon asked.

Lewiston only laughed out in reply because Dillon tickled him.

"Come on, you'll be late. Play on your way to school" Shawna pushed the both of them.

She turned to the nanny beside her, she collected Bryan's bag and lunchbox then she handed them to Dillon.

"Go on now" she pushed Dillon.

"Tell your son not to misbehave in school today, I'll spank his ass if he misbehaves" Shawna said to Dillon who continued playing with Lewis as he left.

"Is that Lewiston father?" Venessa asked.

"Yes, he is" replied Shawna.

"Woah! Now I know where little Lewiston got his good looks from, he resembles his father a lot" Venessa said.

Shawna smiled. She placed her hand on Venessa's shoulder.

"Thanks for saying that, I have to go take my bath now" Shawna said running into the house.

\*Mexico\*

Dilly's phone rang, he picked it up.

"Dad!" He heard from the other end.

"Bryan, have you gotten to Paris?" Dilly asked.

"Yes, just got down from the plane" Bryan replied.

"What about your bodyguard? Is he there with you?"  
Dilly asked pacing about in the room. Susan kept

staring at him as he worried himself while talking to Bryan.

"Yeah, he is right behind me. Thanks for allowing me dad, I appreciate."

The line went off.

\*Paris\*

Bryan turned to look at the personal guard behind him.

He looked at the phone number Dilly told him was Dillon's number, the one he is to call.

But he have got different ideas on his head.



He truly wants to know if Dillon will come running to him once he is in trouble.

He looked around the busy airport then he purposely bumped into a lady, her bag fell and he started apologizing.

"You...! Pay for the damages now" the lady shrieked.

The guard started bringing out money from his wallet to pay the lady.

Seeing that his guard was distracted. He followed a route and missed himself with the crowd.

Then he sighted a cop moving around with his pistol.

Next plan.

He ran to the cop and because the cop was an average height, he stood almost the cop's height.

A closer look at Bryan showed that he was still a kid but looking at him from afar with the way he is dressed, you'll think he is one of this popular dancers or musician.

"Hi sir, do you know me?" Bryan asked.

The cop frowned.

"I don't know you kid" the cop replied.

"Well, now you'll know me" Bryan said then tapped the cop on his head very hard. He took to his heels.

.

To be continued..

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 56-57

.

© Blessing..

.

(Bryan)

Writer's POV

Dillon got to Lewiston school, took him to his class because Lewis wanted it. On getting to the class, a teacher was already teaching the rest of the students.

When Dillon showed up, she had to pause her teaching. Lewis walked into the class proudly with all his classmates staring at him.

He purposely walked towards the boy he placed gum on his sit and touched his head.

"You look ugly today" lewis said to him, earning laughter from the other students.

The teacher that was supposed to control the students couldn't even help but drool at Dillon who wasn't paying her one bit of an attention.

Lewis got to the front sit but all the sits on the row were already occupied. The teacher trying to gain Dillon to look at her told one of the boy's occupying the sits to stand up for lewis and the boy did.

Lewis sat down confidently then turned towards Dillon.

"Bye dad" lewiston waved at him.

Dillon waved back at him before disappearing from there.

On his way back, almost at the hotel where the

penthouse is located. His phone rang and he picked it.

"Hello" he answered.

"Um...Dillon, have you seen Bryan yet? Shit! He's personal guard lost him to a crowd at the airport" Dilly said worriedly from the other end.

"Bryan? Hold on, isn't he there with you?" Dillon asked.

"No, he...he said he wanted to come down since you have been avoiding him but that's not the problem now. You have to look for him" Dilly explained.

"But, the fuck! Why didn't he take the family's jet back? Why put him in a public airplane?"

"Look, he wanted it ok? That is what he wants, just look for him."

"F\*ck you! You can't handle a kid! Asshole!" Dillon annoyingly groaned into the phone. Then he disconnected the call.

He got back into his car, reversed then left for the nearest airport there.

He got there within minutes, he wanted to get down before his phone started ringing.

Considering it to be reasonable call, he picked the call without checking the number.

"Hello?" He hushed into the phone.

"Please we got this number from a boy known as Bryan mark. We..."

"Where is he?" On hearing Bryan's name he calmed down and asked.

He was instructed to come to the station beside the airport where he is.

In minutes he arrived the police station went in and the first person his eyes met with was that of Bryan.

Dillon slowered his steps for a while, he took his eyes off Bryan, he went ahead and inquired what Bryan did from one of the cops.

He was taken to the cop who's head Bryan had hit. The cop explained things to Dillon.

Dillon turned to glare at him after the explanation.

"He is just a kid, you can't possibly arrest him? He'll apologize to you for his actions" Dillon said to the man. He turned to Bryan and made him apologize to the cop.

Dillon took him out from the police station and straight to the airport. He wanted to send him back to Mexico immediately. But when he arrived the airport and asked Bryan to come down from the car, Bryan acted like he was deaf.

Instead, he took out the head phone from the designer bag he was carrying and plugged it on. His act annoyed Dillon a lot but he swallowed down his anger.

He went to the other side and forced him down from the car.

"You won't trouble me, Bryan. I don't need problems from you" Dillon groaned.

Bryan kept holding unto the car refusing to follow him.

"What the fuck do you want?" Dillon finally released his anger on him.

"I want you to look at me for once. Look at me like am not a mistake" Bryan replied back.

"You are going back to Mexico now!" Dillon said.

"No, I won't. You won't force me" Bryan stated.

"What is wrong with you Bryan? Why are you doing these? F\*ck!!" Dillon snapped at him.

"Look at me like I'm not a mistake. Stop avoiding me, I'm not poisonous. Why do you keep ignoring me? What is my offense?" Bryan replied back at him making passerby people look at them.

"You're stubborn" Dillon resigned.

"I was told I got that from you" Bryan replied him. His words suddenly melted Dillon's heart.

He rubbed his forehead then sighed.

He squatted down to Bryan's height.

"You are not a mistake ok? And I'm not ignoring you. I just don't want to get too close to you. I want you to remain with who you already think of and respect as your father, I don't wanna hurt my brother's feelings" Dillon said sounding more calm than ever.



"But you didn't think about my own feelings" Bryan mouthed.

"I'm sorry, but I don't wanna have any close relationship with you. I don't want you close to me or do you wanna hurt him? Let him continue being your dad because I'm sure he loves you, he loves you too much, I can't take you from him. Just understand it, ignoring you isn't what I want but it's for the best" explained Dillon.

Bryan sighed in understanding.

"You don't have to totally ignore me, take me as your nephew then. A way an uncle would, I'll feel better that way" Bryan said.

"Ok cool. Agreed" Dillon agreed.

Bryan smiled. "Can I hug you then?" Bryan asked.

"Of course, you're free" Dillon cooed.

Bryan hugged him but was quick to pull out of the hug, his face turning into a frown.

Dillon looked to see Bryan staring at a lady behind him.

Who is she? Dillon wondered.

"Who is she?" Dillon asked.

Bryan remained muted for a while before replying.

"My mom" replied Bryan.

Dillon had to turn and look at the lady very well. He can see the resemblance between she and Bryan.

He took slow steady steps to her.

"Dillon right?" Rita asked.

"So, you know my name? Is it true that am his father?" Dillon asked.

"Even I am surprised you turned out to be the drunk guy at the bar. I was also really drunk, I found that drunk guy so handsome, I decided to f\*ck him and f\*ck me, it resulted to a pregnancy but surprisedly I slept with the guy's twin brother and forced the kid on him. What is fate really doing? I don't understand" Rita said dumbfounded.

Dillon sighed, he leaned closer and whispered to her hearing alone.

"You are lucky we are in a crowded place and Bryan is also watching us. I swear I could have drained life out of you for what you did. When you get home, lock your doors and stay hidden for the rest of your life. Don't ever appear to Bryan or even Dilly or worst me, I'll skin you alive once that happens and that's a promise bitch."

"Anyways, thanks for giving birth to him" Dillon said out loudly. He walked back to Bryan then took him away from the airport headed for the mansion.

.

.

(He is my son)

Writer's POV

Dillon arrived the mansion with Bryan. He got down, he stood for a while outside staring at the mansion.

Nothing's change. Of course nothing can change.

They intend keeping the mansion the way it is because it's their family's mansion which their late mom and dad built.

Dillon only moved when he felt someone touching him. He looked down to see Bryan.

"You aren't moving, where are we exactly?" Bryan asked.

"Well, this is the family's mansion. Let's go in" he urged him.

The securities kept greeting Dillon but it seemed like he didn't even hear any of their greetings.

They got to the door, before Dillon could push it open. The door opened revealing ma'am Sandra.

"Oh my goodness, child. It's been so long" ma'am Sandra exclaimed hugging Dillon.

Dillon smiled lightly.

This woman has always been there, never got married again, never left their side and she is now like a second mother to them all.

Ma'am Sandra looked down at Bryan. Her eyes widened.

"Who are you kid?" She squatted down a bit to ask.

"It's a long story ma'am, explanation better left for later" Dillon replied walking into the house.

The maids lined up and kept getting him as he walked in but Dillon was never the type to associate himself with a lot of people. He just ignored them as always taking the steps up.

"Wow! This place is big, just like the one in Mexico" Bryan exclaimed looking around.

"It is?" Dillon asked.

"Yes, it's beautiful too" Bryan confirmed.

Ma'am Sandra kept following them until Dillon got to his room.

Neat.

He walked in and sat down in front of the chair there that faced a mirror.

His mind suddenly flashed back to the time he recently got Shawna as a gift from his brother.

He had sexed Shawna right at that position, making her face the mirror.

"Child?" He heard ma'am Sandra's voice. He kicked the memory aside.

"Where is Shawna? Where is Lewiston? You have met them right?" She asked.

"Yeah. Can you help me call her? She is probably waiting for me to get back. Call her, tell her that I'll be here for the main time please?" Dillon asked.

"Ok then. I'll do that, but first you need to tell me who he is?" Ma'am Sandra pointed at Bryan who hasn't stopped looking around since he walked into the room.

"He? He is Dilly's. He must have told you about him at some point right?" Dillon answered.

"Oh! Is he the Bryan? I didn't even know. I'm so sorry son" Ma'am Sandra said referring to Bryan at the last part. She embraced Bryan.

"We should have met sooner?" Ma'am Sandra said to Bryan still hugging him.

"Oh! Ma'am, I'm suffocating here" Bryan said through his nose making ma'am Sandra to move

away from him.

"I'm so sorry, what could you like to eat?" She asked smiling at Bryan who had a grumpy look on.

"You can get me some beef and coffee. That will do" Bryan said.

"And...it should be a hot one, I don't like cold meals, they make me wanna throw up" Bryan added as ma'am sandra was about to leave.

Ma'am sandra looked at Dillon.

"That sounds a lot like a younger you Dillon" she said before disappearing

"You don't like cold meals?" Dillon asked him.

"Yup! Started from a allergy, mom always forces cold meals on me and...."

"Don't ever talk about her if she makes you feel uncomfortable. Got that?" Dillon cut him in.

"Yeah pup, is that your bed?" Bryan pointed at the bed.

"Obviously" Dillon replied.

Bryan ran to the bed, he threw his designer bag aside and lie down.

\*

After some minutes ma'am sandra came back with a plate full of grilled meat and beef, also with a cup of hot chocolate coffee.

She opened the door to Dillon's room to see Bryan and Dillon lying together on his bed and probably asleep.

Ma'am sandra snickered.

Of course your twin brother already opened up to me about everything. He is not so secretive like you, Ma'am said in her mind before leaving the two to continue their sleep.

\*4 hours later\*

"Granny! Granny!!" Ma'am Sandra heard the voice of Lewiston calling to her.

Lewiston has come to take her as a grandmother. She took care of him, bathed him during his early days so she was obviously like his grandma.



Ma'am Sandra started walking down the stairs gently knowing that Shawna has arrived with Lewiston.

She had called and informed Shawna that Dillon came over, she told her that she will be coming later when Lewiston closes from school.

They are here.

She met Lewiston at the middle of the staircase. Lewis jumped on her, she carried him up into a warm embrace.

Shawna was right behind him, a smile of her face.

"Hi ma'am" Shawna smiled.

"Oh dear, you are finally here. He is in his room" ma'am Sandra said knowing that the person she badly wants to see is Dillon.

Shawna smiled at her with little pink blush. Ma'am Sandra now knows in and out of her.

Shawna walked pass them going to Dillon's room.

She opened the room but didn't find Dillon there, instead she found Bryan.

Huh! Where is he? Shawna wondered as she walked into the room. Shutting the door behind her.

She walked up to Bryan who was sitting on the bed with his headphone on.

"Hey" she tapped Bryan attracting his attention.

Bryan removed the headphone from his ears.

"Hey" he replied her.

"Where is Dillon?" Shawna asked.

"In the bathroom" Bryan pointed.

"But who are you? I've never seen you before"  
Shawna asked.

"Yeah, same here" Bryan replied her.

The door to the bathroom opened and Dillon walked out.

Shawna turned to look at him.

"You're here, been waiting for you" Dillon said.

"Bryan, could you excuse us please?" Dillon asked  
Bryan.

"Yeah, of course" Bryan replied then left.

"Who is he?" Shawna asked. Instead of replying her, he grabbed her by the waist and slammed his lips on hers.

"Geez! You don't know much I've missed this" he groaned in between the kiss.

The kiss lasted for few minutes before shawna pushed him away and walked to the door.

"Get your clothes on, I can feel your bulge through that towel" Shawna said.

Dillon chuckled.

"My body wants only you" he said as he walked to the closet there to pick out a dress.

"So, who is he?" Shawna asked again.

"He? He is Bryan. Will you believe it if I say that I actually father him?" Dillon asked walking through his closet.

"You aren't serious, are you?" Shawna asked back.

"I'm serious. He is my son, are you angry?" Dillon

replied her.

"Your son?" Dillon heard Shawna's voice behind her.

He turned to look at her. She was now standing behind him.

"How did you get here so fast?" Dillon asked, surprised.

"Come on tell me, is he really your son?" Shawna asked curiously.

"Yeah, I father him like I said but...he is now Dilly's son. You don't have to worry much."

Dillon explained the whole thing to Shawna to cool her curiosity.

"Woah! He is really your son? So it's true?" Shawna asked.

"You knew?" Dillon turned to ask her.

"Naomi, I mistakenly overheard her conversation with Sam years ago. You really have a son. What of his mother?" Shawna spoke so fast.

"Oh his mom? If I ever see her, I'm killing her myself,

you don't have to get jealous" Dillon replied her.

Shawna exhaled deeply.

"Oh thank goodness! I was scared you were gonna marry another woman" said Shawna.

Dillon chuckled.

"I can only get married to these three women in this world. Their names are Shawna Marcus, Shawna Marcus and Shawna Marcus" Dillon said earning a blush from Shawna.

TBC

Sold To A Gang Leader

.

Season 2

.

Sequence 58-60

.

Finale..

.

© Blessing..

.

.

(I need you)

Writer's POV

"Really? You are gonna marry only me? Well, I was scared you were gonna..."

"Nothing like that will happen. I won't be marrying Bryan's mother, I'll be killing her" Dillon interrupted Shawna.

Shawna continued blushing, happy that she was the only one preferable to him.

"So, when are you gonna marry me then?" She asked.

"Huh! I should be asking you that. Maybe you should marry me instead, I'll bear your surname, huh? It sounds cool, right?" Dillon teased.

Shawna released a slight frown.

"I'll be going" she turned and immediately walked

out from the room, sucking.

"How can I be the one marrying you?" She sucked as she went down the hallway - a little bit hungry.

She got to the stairs to hear ma'am Sandra's voice.

"You guys should stop playing the ball here ok? Your father won't be happy with you. You two should stop" she heard the elderly woman's voice.

She sighted Bryan and Lewiston playing a ball inside the sitting room.

"Grandma, you really need to let me win him. I have to" Lewiston replied her.

Getting really curious, she hurried down the stairs to see everything for herself.

"Why are you two playing ball inside the sitting room? Can't you just go outside?" Shawna fixed her hands on her waist as she asked.

"He said he wanted to play with me" Bryan replied picking up the ball.

"Oh mom! Please leave us" lewiston cried out.

"No! This is a sitting room. It's not a playing ground. You can go outside if you wanna continue playing" Shawna pointed out.

"But it's already dark outside" lewiston cried out again.

"What are you shouting at them?" Dillon's voice asked from behind.

Shawna turned to look at Dillon.

"Well, your sons are playing a ball inside the sitting room. I suppose you won't support that, will you?" Shawna asked.

Dillon looked at Bryan, and then Lewiston.

"You can leave them. It's already late. It's only for tonight after all. Let's go" he pulled Shawna along with him going outside.

Ma'am Sandra on hearing Dillon's response calmed down. She can't Dillon will act so cute when it comes to his sons.

He as a kid always pick fight with Dilly. Its cute seeing him this way.



\*An hour later\*

A maid walked up to Bryan and Lewiston.

"You boys should head to the sitting room now, the food is ready" the maid said.

The two of them stopped playing already tired.

"I don't know who you are but I kind of like you, you said you aren't gonna be living here. Did you come back with my dad?" Lewiston asked Bryan holding onto the ball.

"Kind of, I think I'll be going back tomorrow. I like you too. So, what's your name?" Bryan asked.

"I'm Lewiston but you can call me Lewi for short" Lewiston replied.

"So, he is really your dad?" Bryan asked, curious.

"Yeah, he is. Is he your dad too?" Lewiston replied, then asked.

"Um...by birth, yeah but my real father, the one who looks after me is in Mexico" Bryan replied.

"He looks a lot like him. I heard they're twins" Bryan

explained following Lewiston as he head to the sitting room.

"Woah! That's cool. So my dad is a twin with your dad? That's awesome. But it's a pity I won't get to see you everyday tho" Lewiston said.

"Yeah right. That woman, she is your mom too?" Bryan asked again.

"Yes, she's so beautiful right? She is the most beautiful woman on planet earth" Lewis replied proudly.

Bryan chuckled.

"I guess you're lucky then. To have such a beautiful lady who obviously loves you" Bryan said.

Lewiston stopped walking, he turned to stare up at Bryan

"Why did you say that? Doesn't your mom love you as much? You can share mine with me then, I won't mind" Lewiston said.

Bryan chuckled again.

He took his hand to Lewiston hair and scattered his

hair.

"You're cute. I already got a better mom and a beautiful baby sister, Ellie, thank you" Bryan said.

"You're welcome buddy" Lewiston replied, they finally got to the dinning to see Shawna and Dillon waiting for them.

Lewiston went to sit beside Shawna while Bryan sat beside Dillon.

They started eating and throughout the dinner, Shawna kept watching Lewis speak freely with Bryan.

That made her relieved. At least they are friends. Due to Lewis picky nature, Shawna was a bit worried that Bryan and Lewiston relationship may go badly, but thank goodness.

"So pup, when I am leaving for Mexico?" Bryan asked Dillon.

"Tomorrow morning. It should have been today but um...the family's jet is still getting prepared" Dillon replied.

\*Thirty minutes after dinner\*

Both Bryan and Lewiston were taken to a room to sleep since Lewiston couldn't stop talking to him.

One habit Lewiston inherited that isn't from Dillon's, might be from Shawna's side.

\*

Dillon sat on her bed staring as Shawna undressed herself to take a bath. They can't go back to the penthouse and she isn't bothered. The mansion is the main home for them all and she has gotten really comfortable there.

And oh... Beatrice, she watched Beatrice get engaged some times last year, she married and left the mansion to live with her husband.

It was such a beautiful sight.

After undressing, Shawna went into the bathroom and had a quick bath.

"I noticed you staring at Bryan earlier at the dinner" Dillon said.

"Yeah, I did" Shawna replied.

"You like him?" Dillon asked.

"Of course, there shouldn't be any reason for me to hate him. Well, except...if you had brought his mom here, I wouldn't be so sure of that" Shawna replied truthfully, wearing the nightgown there.

Dillon chuckled.

"So, you don't want any other woman around me huh!? Are you that stingy?" Dillon teased.

Shawna turned to look at him.

"Stingy? You call that stingy?" She frowned.

"Well, if you wanna marry her, you can go ahead. The only thing I want from you are kids, I want like two more kids from you and then you are free to marry someone else, I won't get jealous" Shawna said.

"Only kids? You don't want me?" Dillon asked, standing up.

"Of course not. Why should I want you when you want another woman?" Shawna couldn't help but roll her eyes at him.

Dillon came up behind her. He turned her and made her back hit the closet.

"Really? You don't want me?" He asked, his hand trailing down to her virginã.

"Ye..yeah" Shawna replied.

"Are you really really sure bout that?" Dillon asked in a whisper as his hand lifted Shawna soft fabric.

His fingers touched and rubbed her clit, making Shawna gasp.

"You...!" She was about saying when Dillon suddenly pushed one of his fingers into her virginã. It was so fast and unexpected. It made Shawna gasp again.

He pinned her to the closet and started finger fuckiñg her.

It didn't take time for her to get wet at all.

"You say you don't want me?" Dillon asked again.

"No! It was a mistake. I want you, I..I..I need you" Shawna replied as the pleasure he gave her became more intense and sweet.

.

.

(Ending)

Writer's POV

A lot of weeks passed.

Everything was going great, Lewis was about turning four and he was so excited about it.

Some of his school friends, the ones he likes were invited. He was happier that even Bryan was gonna be coming down to Paris for his birthday.

Naomi and Sam who were hooked up in San Francisco decided to return for Lewis's birthday since Dillon wanted it big. It was the first time celebrating New Year with him, he wanted it to be on the news, carried by reporters and all social media.

Shawna was so excited, though not always too excited. It looks like Dillon really meant what he said by not being ready to get married, he was not showing signs of a man that wants to get married at all.

He is now always busy with Dilly, and aside that, he

is planning on how to possibly move to Mexico to help Dilly out with the company.

Shawna doesn't really know his plans because he doesn't disclose his plans to her that much, it made her feel off most times.

But thank goodness for the great distraction.

A month before Dillon reappeared, shawna had bumped into valentine, her twin and then their big brother at the mall. She was going shopping for Lewiston's clothing when she bumped into them.

Tina had asked her if she was Lewiston mother and she had said yes, she also added that Dillon was his father and he was already married to her.

She didn't wanna look like someone that got used, someone that got dumped, that was the reason she wanted Dillon to marry her quickly.

Her statement had made the twins mouth hang open for more than 3 minutes.

She doesn't want to be a laughing stock in the future.



Ma'am was overjoyed, she has come to take Shawna as her real child and Lewiston who is always over her whenever they meet as her grandchild.

Ma'am Sandra lost her family years back, a young married wife with two kids and a caring husband. She left them to the market but when she got back, their apartment was on fire, it burned and killed her whole family.

Dillon's parent employed her as Dillon and Dilly's nanny after that incident and that was how she started a new life. Caring for the twins, she cared for them like they were her own children and that was it till today.

The whole mansion was decorated with Lewis's favorite colour. His best music was booming out of the mansion and he was busy running around with few of his friends.

Dillon stood inside his room staring at Sam who just came back with Naomi for Lewiston's birthday. Since he woke up from coma, it was the first time

seeing him again.

"So, you're engaged to Naomi?" Dillon asked, his bossy tone still there.

"Ye..yes boss, I am" sam replied knowing that a day will come when he will be interrogated like this from Dillon.

The next thing, Dillon brought out a gun and pointed it at him.

"Do you like her or you wanna use her?" He asked sternly.

"I..boss, what are you doing"

"I asked you a question" Dillon snapped.

"I love her" Sam replied.

"Really? Ok then. I'll give you a chance, I'll make you really rich, leave Naomi alone. I don't want you two together" Dillon said shocking and scaring Sam.

"But if you want it the hard way, I'll have to pull the trigger":Dillon said, his voice hard.

"Bo.."

"Don't boss me. Our master and servant relationship has long ended" Dillon hushed.

"What do you choose?"

"I..I love her regardless. You should no my feelings for her didn't just develop, I started liking her ever since we were kids" sam said.

Dillon retreated his gun.

"Good, you can leave";he said surprising Sam.

"Than..thank you" Sam thanked and immediately left his room, not glancing back or waiting for another sec.

Dillon tugged a small ring box into his trouser pocket, laughing at the reaction he got from Sam.

He left the room in search of Shawna.

He got directed to the kitchen at the other side of the mansion. He got there to see her with the cooks.

"Shaw" he signalled her to come.

Shawna walked up to him wearing a simple look on. She hasn't been smiling much with him and he

knows why.

"What?" She asked cleaning her hands on the apron she is putting on. Dillon pulled her close and tried kissing her but she resisted.

"Stop, can't you see am busy? That can wait" she snapped at him and made to leave but Dillon pulled her back.

Shawna sighed, she turned to look at him.

"Will you stop being angry? I aren't doing all these for nothing" Dillon said.

"Well, what is it you really want?" Shawna groused out.

"Oh! I was about to propose to you today but seems you're not in the mood to be proposed to. I guess I'll have to return the ring to the jewelry shop" Dillon said his hand going into his pocket where he kept the small box containing the ring.

He didn't want to expose it until it was time but guess Shawna's attitude have changed that. Now it won't be as romantic as it should be.

Shawna's eyes widened at the small box.

"I'm..ready, we can talk" she said blinking.

She immediately pulled her apron and threw it off.

"Um..let's go to the back where.." Shawna was suggesting when Dillon took her by surprise and kissed her.

"We can do it anywhere now. The surprise has been ruined, but let's just" Dillon said taking her hand into his.

He took her up to his room.

"Well, you already know what I wanna do. I guess I should just be quick about it" Dillon said opening the box and bringing out the small ring.

Shawna gave her hand to him immediately.

"I haven't even asked if you'll marry me. Will you calm down and hear me out first?" Asked Dillon feeling tired.

"Ok, I will" Shawna cooed.

"Ok, Shawna will you be with me till Enternity?" Will

you..continue enduring my characters? My dirty behaviors?"

"Will you continue with me even if I..get arrested? With a man like man, you can't be sure, I've killed Shawna..I..I've done a lot of bad things"

"Nowadays I..I remember the old days, when I usually inflict pain on you. I made you cry a lot I..I am like a demon but got tamed by you. You know I had promised myself before that I'll never have anything to do with such pure, harmless lady like you."

"When I got so angry, when I was killing Matthias, you still cried for someone like him, you still felt guilt for someone that abducted and tried raping you."

A pause stepped in as everywhere became silent.

"You know two of us are like two opposite world, we were never meant to cross path. You are too good for me, I..I shouldn't have anything with you because I don't deserve you one bit, I might pull you into darkness. You know I usually find it hard to

forgive and my anger.."

He sighs.

"My anger isn't good at all. Like I said I had promised myself not to have anything with you before going into a coma, but when I came back and heard I already have a son, with you? I had to let go of that promise, I couldn't stop myself from getting back with someone so good and nice, I couldn't deny myself happiness, I guess am also selfish not to let you go but if...if at all you decide to leave me one day or even decide not to accept my proposal then it's fine, I don't deserve half of you anyways I."

"It's okay...I want you" Shawna cut in.

"You have said so much. You didn't inflict pain on me then, you changed me. Without meeting you, I could have still been in square by now, I couldn't have known so much happiness, I couldn't have known what true love is, lewiston couldn't be here by now if I hadn't met you. Because of you, I attended college, I got a job, an apartment to

myself."

"I have you to thank, I'm glad I met you. You've saved me countless times too, even tho I know how angry you can get, but no matter how angry you are, you still wouldn't hurt me."

"No matter how! And if the cops show up here one of this days to arrest you, I won't let them take you, because I'll simply commit murder if it means keeping you by myself. No one is perfect, Dillon you..without you I am nothing, there is no way I'm rejecting that ring..I really love you..and yes, I...I'll be your life partner, we'll be together forever" Shawna said sniffing in.

"You sure you'll be able to handle my behaviors"  
Dillon asked.

"Of course. I promise" Shawna smiled.

Dillon slid in the ring into one of her fingers.

He made to kiss her but she stopped him.

"I want to say something actually" she said.

"What is it?" Dillon asked.



Shawna took Dillon's hand, she placed it on her belly.

"I'm pregnant again. I'm praying it's a girl. You'll be a great father" shawna revealed.

Dillon gasped as he touched her belly.

"Seriously?" He asked squatting down a bit to place his ear on her belly.

"Seriously" Shawna responded staring down at him.

"Thanks, I...I haven't said this before but I really love you more than I can explain and I swear that nothing, nothing will ever break our family apart" Dillon said. Shawna smiled in agreement.

.

THE END..